

P **USING**
Portuguese
A GUIDE TO CONTEMPORARY USAGE

TIMOTHY MCGOVERN AND ANA SOFIA GANHO

CAMBRIDGE

www.cambridge.org/9780521796637

This page intentionally left blank

Using Portuguese

This is a guide to Portuguese usage for students who have already acquired the basics of the language and wish to extend their knowledge. It covers both the Brazilian and the European varieties of the language, and differentiates clearly between them. The book gives detailed explanations of grammatical structures and semantic fields and, unlike conventional grammars, it pays special attention to those areas of vocabulary and grammar which cause most difficulty for English speakers. It also contains a special chapter for students who are familiar with Spanish, highlighting key similarities and differences between the two languages. Careful consideration is given throughout to questions of style, register, and politeness which are essential to achieving an appropriate level of formality or informality in writing and speech. Clear, readable, and easy to consult via its index, this is an essential reference for learners seeking access to the finer nuances of the Portuguese language.

ANA SOFIA GANHO is Assistant Professor of Portuguese, Brazilian and Lusophone African Literature and Film at Emory University, Atlanta, and the director of the Portuguese Program she started. She is currently finishing revisions to a manuscript on Portuguese and Latin American Modernism(s) and working on a book on postcolonialism and cinema in the context of Brazil, Portugal, and Lusophone Africa.

TIMOTHY MCGOVERN is Assistant Professor of Nineteenth- and Twentieth-Century Spanish and Portuguese Literatures and Language Teaching Methodology at the University of California, Santa Barbara, where he is also director of the Spanish and Portuguese Language Programs. He has published widely on topics related to Portuguese, Spanish, and Catalan literatures.

Companion titles to *Using Portuguese*

Using French (third edition)

A guide to contemporary usage

R. E. BATCHELOR AND M. H. OFFORD

(ISBN 0 521 64177 2 hardback)

(ISBN 0 521 64593 X paperback)

Using Spanish

A guide to contemporary usage

R. E. BATCHELOR AND C. J. POUNTAIN

(ISBN 0 521 42123 3 hardback)

(ISBN 0 521 26987 3 paperback)

Using German

A guide to contemporary usage

MARTIN DURRELL

(ISBN 0 521 42077 6 hardback)

(ISBN 0 521 31556 5 paperback)

Using Russian

A guide to contemporary usage

DEREK OFFORD

(ISBN 0 521 45130 2 hardback)

(ISBN 0 521 45760 2 paperback)

Using Japanese

A guide to contemporary usage

WILLIAM MCCLURE

(ISBN 0 521 64155 1 hardback)

(ISBN 0 521 64614 6 paperback)

Using Italian

A guide to contemporary usage

J. J. KINDER AND V. M. SAVINI

(ISBN 0 521 48556 8 paperback)

Using French Synonyms

R. E. BATCHELOR AND M. H. OFFORD

(ISBN 0 521 37277 1 hardback)

(ISBN 0 521 37878 8 paperback)

Using Spanish Synonyms

R. E. BATCHELOR

(ISBN 0 521 44160 9 hardback)

(ISBN 0 521 44694 5 paperback)

Using German Synonyms

MARTIN DURRELL

(ISBN 0 521 46552 4 hardback)

(ISBN 0 521 46954 6 paperback)

Using Italian Synonyms

HOWARD MOSS AND VANNA MOTTA

(ISBN 0 521 47506 6 hardback)

(ISBN 0 521 47573 2 paperback)

Using French Vocabulary

JEAN H. DUFFY

(ISBN 0 521 57040 9 hardback)

(ISBN 0 521 57851 5 paperback)

Using Spanish Vocabulary

R. E. BATCHELOR AND MIGUEL

A. SAN JOSÉ

(ISBN 0 521 81042 6 hardback)

(ISBN 0 521 00862 X paperback)

Using Italian Vocabulary

MARCEL DANESI

(ISBN 0 521 81882 6 hardback)

(ISBN 0 521 52425 3 paperback)

Further titles in preparation

Using Portuguese

A Guide to Contemporary Usage

ANA SOFIA GANHO

Emory University

TIMOTHY McGOVERN

University of California, Santa Barbara



CAMBRIDGE
UNIVERSITY PRESS

CAMBRIDGE UNIVERSITY PRESS

Cambridge, New York, Melbourne, Madrid, Cape Town, Singapore, São Paulo

Cambridge University Press

The Edinburgh Building, Cambridge CB2 2RU, UK

Published in the United States of America by Cambridge University Press, New York

www.cambridge.org

Information on this title: www.cambridge.org/9780521796637

© Cambridge University Press 2004

This publication is in copyright. Subject to statutory exception and to the provision of relevant collective licensing agreements, no reproduction of any part may take place without the written permission of Cambridge University Press.

First published in print format 2004

ISBN-13 978-0-521-18623-3 eBook (EBL)

ISBN-10 0-521-18623-1 eBook (EBL)

ISBN-13 978-0-521-79663-7 paperback

ISBN-10 0-521-79663-6 paperback

Cambridge University Press has no responsibility for the persistence or accuracy of URLs for external or third-party internet websites referred to in this publication, and does not guarantee that any content on such websites is, or will remain, accurate or appropriate.

Contents

List of abbreviations	<i>page</i>	x
Acknowledgments		xi
1	Introduction	1
1.1	The Portuguese language today	1
1.2	Linguistic registers and regional variations	3
2	Written expression	35
2.1	Accentuation	35
2.1.1	Diacritical marks	35
2.1.2	Stress	37
2.2	Punctuation	40
2.3	Hyphenation	40
2.4	Capitalization	41
3	Vocabulary	43
3.1	Misleading vocabulary	43
3.1.1	False cognates	43
3.1.2	Homographs	46
3.1.3	Homophones	48
3.1.4	Regional variations	50
3.2	Transitional phrases	51
3.3	Prepositions	55
3.3.1	<i>A</i>	55
3.3.2	<i>Ante</i>	59
3.3.3	<i>Antes</i>	59
3.3.4	<i>Após</i>	60
3.3.5	<i>Até</i>	60
3.3.6	<i>Com</i>	61
3.3.7	<i>Contra</i>	63
3.3.8	<i>De</i>	64
3.3.9	<i>Desde</i>	69
3.3.10	<i>Diante de</i>	69

3.3.11	<i>Em</i>	70	
3.3.12	<i>Entre</i>	75	
3.3.13	<i>Para</i> and <i>por</i>	75	
3.3.14	<i>Sem</i>	79	
3.3.15	<i>Sob</i>	79	
3.3.16	<i>Sobre</i>	80	
3.4	Prefixes and suffixes	80	
3.4.1	Diminutives	80	
3.4.2	Augmentatives	82	
3.4.3	Professions, stores, and services	83	
3.5	Forms of address and treatment	84	
3.5.1	Title and forms of address	84	
3.5.2	Abbreviated titles	86	
3.5.3	Closing expressions for letters	86	
3.5.4	Telephone communication	87	
3.6	Idiomatic expressions	88	
3.6.1	Proverbs	88	
3.6.2	Metaphors	92	
3.6.3	Verbal expressions	93	
3.6.4	Similes	94	
3.7	Adjectives	95	
3.7.1	Adjectives pertaining to countries and towns	95	
3.8	Proper names	100	
3.8.1	The Ancient Greek world	100	
3.8.2	The Ancient Roman world	101	
3.8.3	The Bible	102	
3.8.4	The medieval and Renaissance world	102	
3.8.5	Contemporary personal names	103	
3.8.6	Names of persons without close English equivalents	104	
3.8.7	Cities, islands, states and counties	105	
3.8.7.1	Europe	105	
3.8.7.2	Africa	106	
3.8.7.3	North America	106	
3.8.7.4	Asia	107	
3.8.7.5	Latin America	107	
3.8.7.6	Middle and Far East	107	
3.8.8	Rivers	107	
3.8.9	Mountains	108	
3.9	Abbreviations and acronyms	108	
3.9.1	Common abbreviations	108	
3.9.2	Abbreviations of weights and measures	109	
3.9.3	National and international organizations	110	
3.10	Numerals	111	
3.10.1	Cardinal and ordinal numbers	112	
3.11	Measurements	113	
3.11.1	Currencies	113	
3.11.2	Dates	113	

3.11.3	Time	115
3.11.4	Weight	116
3.11.5	Distance	117
3.11.6	Temperatures	117
3.11.7	Sizes	118
3.11.8	Quantities	119
3.12	Interjections	119
3.12.1	Religious	119
3.12.2	Pain	119
3.12.3	Surprise	119
3.12.4	Rage	120
3.12.5	Joy	120
3.12.6	Warning	120
3.12.7	Pity	121
3.13	Collective nouns	121
3.14	Animal sounds	121
3.15	Onomatopoeic words	122
3.16	Terms of courtesy	123
4	Nouns and adjectives	126
4.1	Nouns and gender	126
4.2	Number	129
4.2.1	General rule	129
4.2.2	Words ending in <i>-l</i>	130
4.2.3	Words ending in <i>-ão</i>	131
4.2.4	Words with only plural forms	132
4.3	Word order	132
4.3.1	Sentence structure	132
4.3.2	Nouns and their modifiers	133
4.4	Adjectives	134
4.4.1	Adjectives with different meaning depending on position	134
4.4.2	Demonstrative adjectives	136
4.4.3	Possessive adjectives	136
5	Verbs	137
5.1	Simple indicative mode tenses	137
5.1.1	Present tense	137
5.1.2	Preterit tense	138
5.1.3	Imperfect tense	139
5.1.4	Future tense	141
5.1.5	The conditional	142
5.1.6	The personal infinitive	142
5.2	Compound indicative mode tenses	145
5.2.1	Present perfect	145
5.2.2	Pluperfect	145

5.2.3	Future perfect	146	
5.2.4	Conditional perfect	146	
5.3	The simple subjunctive mode tenses		147
5.3.1	Present subjunctive	149	
5.3.2	Past subjunctive	149	
5.3.3	Future subjunctive	150	
5.4	Compound subjunctive mode tenses		151
5.4.1	Present perfect subjunctive	151	
5.4.2	Pluperfect subjunctive	151	
5.4.3	Future perfect subjunctive	152	
5.5	Present and past participles	152	
5.5.1	The present participle	152	
5.5.2	The past participle	153	
5.6	Imperative	154	
5.6.1	Second person informal (<i>tu</i>)	154	
5.6.2	Other imperative forms	155	
5.7	The gerund	155	
5.8	Periphrastic verb forms	155	
5.8.1	Continuous tenses	155	
5.8.2	The progressive tenses	156	
5.8.3	<i>Acabar de</i>	156	
5.9	<i>Ser, estar, and ficar</i>	156	
5.9.1	Location	156	
5.9.2	Description	157	
5.9.3	Special uses of <i>ser</i>	157	
5.9.4	Special uses of <i>estar</i>	158	
5.10	<i>Saber and conocer</i>	159	
5.11	Modal verbs	160	
5.12	Passive voice	161	
6	Reported speech	163	
6.1	Direct reported speech	163	
6.2	Indirect reported speech	163	
7	Pronouns and articles	166	
7.1	Articles	166	
7.1.1	Indefinite article	166	
7.1.2	Definite article	166	
7.2	Pronouns	168	
7.2.1	Subject pronouns	168	
7.2.2	Object pronouns	169	
7.2.3	Reflexive pronouns	173	
7.2.4	Interrogative pronouns	174	
7.2.5	Relative pronouns	174	
7.2.6	Demonstrative pronouns and adjectives	174	

7.2.7	Indefinite pronouns and adjectives	175
7.2.8	Possessive pronouns and adjectives	176
8	Adverbs	177
8.1	Adverbs of manner formed from adjectives	177
8.2	Adverbs of time, place, quantity, and manner with autonomous forms	177
8.2.1	Adverbs of time	178
8.2.2	Adverbs of place	178
8.2.3	Adverbs of manner	178
8.2.4	Adverbs of quantity	179
8.3	Adverbs of affirmation and negation	179
9	Comparatives and superlatives	181
9.1	Comparatives of inequality	181
9.1.1	Comparing qualities	181
9.1.2	Comparing quantities	181
9.1.3	Special comparative (and superlative) adjectives and adverbs	182
9.2	Comparisons of equality	182
9.2.1	Quality	182
9.2.2	Quantity	183
9.3	Superlatives	183
9.3.1	The superlative with adjectives	183
9.3.2	The superlative with adverbs and nouns	184
9.3.3	The superlative with verbs	184
10	Interrogatives	185
10.1	Yes/no questions	185
10.2	Wh-words or question words	185
11	Fields of meaning – vocabulary extension	187
12	Portuguese for Spanish speakers	242
12.1	Pronunciation	242
12.2	Cognates with different genders	245
12.3	False cognates	246
12.4	Spelling	247
12.5	<i>Ser</i> with location	247
12.6	Differences in verb tense and mode	248
	Index of Portuguese words	250

Abbreviations

adj	adjective
Br	Brazilian Portuguese
col	colloquial
f	feminine form
inf	infinitive
intr	intransitive
m	masculine form
pl	plural
Pt	European Portuguese
reg	regional
sg	singular
tr	transitive

Acknowledgments

One of the main goals of this book was to provide diversity of material, geographically and nationally speaking, rather than to limit samples and explanations to the standard discourse of a single country where Portuguese is the official language. In order to achieve this, the authors' knowledge of the Portuguese spoken in Portugal and Brazil was enhanced and/or supplemented as often as possible with the experience of speakers from specific regions, or countries (in the case of Lusophone Africa). The end result, was, we hope, a considerably more inclusive and richer linguistic and cultural, albeit not exhaustive, scenario.

We wish to thank these colleagues and friends who assisted us with their infinite patience and humor, their guidance and regional linguistic expertise and at times, too, with their imagination in the writing of samples: Marilene Barros-Luís, Arthur Bell, Sílvia Oliveira, Ana Santos-Olmsted, Heather Prado, Maria Elisa and Luís António Gonçalves.

Ana Sofia Ganho and Timothy McGovern

1 Introduction

Portuguese is currently the mother tongue of nearly 200 million speakers and the official language of eight countries: Angola, Brazil, Cape Verde, East Timor, Guinea Bissau, Mozambique, Portugal, and São Tomé and Príncipe. It is currently growing in number of speakers owing to population explosions in most of these countries. There are also many creole varieties of Portuguese when it combines with native African languages. There are many variants of Portuguese, both within and between its different nations, including differences from northern to southern Portugal and a variety of phonological and lexical differences found in Brazil. The Portuguese language is traditionally broken into two major types: European Portuguese, which is spoken in Portugal (and includes the variations spoken in the Azores and Madeira archipelagos) and Africa (albeit with some differences); and Brazilian Portuguese.

In both European and Brazilian Portuguese there are major subdivisions. In the Portuguese of Portugal, the standard dialect is that of Lisbon and/or Coimbra, while some of the major variations are spoken in the islands of the Azores and Madeira, and in Northern Portugal. In Africa, the variants of Portuguese are enriched in vocabulary through contact with the various indigenous African languages and they have acquired their own pronunciation and some special verbal inflections. African vocabulary (mostly Kimbundu) can also be found in Portuguese from both Portugal and Brazil, being more abundant in the latter. In Brazilian Portuguese, some of the most identifiable variants are those of Rio de Janeiro, the Northeast, São Paulo, and the southern region.

1.1 The Portuguese language today

Africa

Besides its role as official language, Portuguese has combined with indigenous languages as a Creole, especially in Cape Verde, Guinea

Bissau, and São Tomé and Príncipe. These Creole dialects became, in the twentieth century, not only spoken languages, but also languages used in both written literature and film. One reason that Portuguese usage has survived in Africa is that no African languages were taught at school; Portuguese was necessary to access administrative careers, and citizenship until 1961. Those wanting to go to college attended a university in Portugal where, ironically they often met other pro-independence students. Portuguese is also used as a lingua franca.

The United States are home to a large Cape Verdean community with its most visible poles in the New England states.

Brazil

Brazil is the country with the largest number of Portuguese speakers (approximately 160 million). Brazilian Portuguese, which has become increasingly independent of the other varieties, is characterized by a large number of words derived from indigenous South American languages such as Tupi, and also from indigenous African languages, mostly from the Bantu and Yoruba groups, brought by slaves from the west coast of Africa from the sixteenth to the nineteenth centuries. European and Brazilian versions of Portuguese underwent different changes owing to the different influences to which each were exposed. For example, whereas Portugal was more susceptible to French influence, the ‘creolization’ factor was much greater in Brazil than in Portugal after the seventeenth century. In more recent times, Brazilian Portuguese has incorporated a larger number of words from Spanish and English due to calquing than has occurred in Portugal.

In Brazil the major centers which demonstrate the different characteristics of Brazilian Portuguese are São Paulo, Rio de Janeiro, the South, and the North East. Brazilian Portuguese also contains words and idioms that reflect the many ethnicities that Brazil has welcomed through time, in particular since the turn of the nineteenth century. A lax language policy (or lack of means to enforce one had it existed consistently), a precarious educational system, and a highly stratified society since colonial times, all resulted in a great gap between written and oral language. Only from the 1920s was there a conscious effort, on the part of writers associated with the *Modernismo* project, to bridge that gap and to bring colloquial and real-life Brazilian Portuguese into the written text.

Portugal

Portugal, where the language originated, is home to about 10 million speakers, both on the mainland and on the island communities of Azores and Madeira. Portuguese communities in North America and other continents, as well as recent trends in the immigration to

Portugal of Eastern Europeans and Africans, also contribute to the growing diversity of Portuguese. Peninsular Portuguese is much more homogenous, at least with respect to vocabulary, than the Portuguese spoken in Brazil and Africa. In the nineteenth and twentieth centuries, Portuguese has borrowed a significant number of words from French and English. Portugal entered the European Community in 1986 and currently Portuguese is an official language of the European Community.

Other speakers

Portuguese dialects are also currently spoken in small Asian enclaves, such as Macau (China), Goa (India), and is the official language of East Timor for historical reasons. A Portuguese-based Creole language is also spoken in Casamança, Senegal.

1.2 Linguistic registers and regional variations

Explanation of registers

Spoken and written language can vary to a great degree depending on the situation, the goal of the discourse, the level of education of both speaker and addressee, and the medium in which the discourse occurs. Thus, an e-mail to a friend, a business letter, a political speech, and an argument in a bar all elicit greatly differing styles of language. The three basic registers, described below, are addressed in this book.

R1

Consists of informal, colloquial speech. This may include slang, idiomatic expressions and proverbs, and informal syntax (i.e. discourse which does not necessarily follow the formal rules of grammar). R1 is normally used in conversations between family and friends.

A subcategory is R1* which indicates vulgar or obscene expressions. Many of these are included in this book since they are very much a part of the contemporary usage which this text seeks to describe. They are included more for the user's comprehension than for usage, since the learner of a foreign language may often misjudge the situation in which a certain obscenity may be employed.

R2

Is the standard or "neutral" register, most commonly characterized as that used in news broadcasts, or in a classroom setting. It is

characterized by its lack of colloquialisms and its adherence to the rules of “correct” grammar, as well as its avoidance of vulgarity.

R3

This is the most formal register, characterized by the use of highly specialized vocabulary, archaic forms, and little-used but highly formal expressions and vocabulary; in literature it often includes a large number of symbols or metaphors. It may be used in literature, in legal or medical discourse, academic presentations, specialized professional presentations, and formal letters.

It is rare to find any piece of spoken or written discourse that belongs solely to one of the registers, but the words and expressions used in this book are still marked, where necessary, to aid students in their selection when speaking and writing.

Passages illustrating register and local variety

Example of R1 (European Portuguese): At the train station of Santa Apolónia, in Lisbon

Cristina: Sílvia, vamos antes para aquele guichê, este não aceita multibanco.

Sílvia: Ah, pois é. Estou a ver, deve ser por isso que tem uma bicha maior.

(10 minutes go by)

Man at the
ticket counter:

Boa-tarde.

Sílvia: Boa-tarde . . . Eram dois bilhetes de ida e volta pro Porto, no Pendular, o do meio-dia, ‘fachavor’. Em primeira.

Man: Ora são . . . oitenta euros.

Sílvia: Xii . . . caramba, até o comboio subiu com o euro! . . .

(Rodrigo comes up behind them)

Rodrigo: Olha quem são elas! Então, vão passear?

Cristina: Hã?! Epá, que susto, Rodrigo!!

Sílvia: Olá, Rodrigo . . . então, estás bom?

Rodrigo: Sim, vou andando, e vocês? Há que tempos que não vos via! Agora não se telefona, é?

Sílvia: Epá, só ontem é que acabámos os exames. O que é que fazes por estes lados? . . . que pergunta parva, não deves ter vindo comprar sapatos . . . ou vens apanhar o comboio, ou buscar alguém, calculo? . . .

Rodrigo: Sim senhora, está esperta, a menina, os exames fizeram-lhe bem, hein Cristina?

Cristina: Pois, sabes, normalmente não dá uma pra caixa, coitadinha . . .

Sílvia: Olhem, vocês os dois, vão ver se eu estou na esquina . . .

- Rodrigo: Pois . . . o raio do comboio está atrasado, que chatice, vim buscar o meu irmão . . . bolas, queria sair daqui antes da hora de ponta . . . E vocês?
- Cristina: Viemos comprar bilhetes, vamos amanhã ao Porto, passar o São João, sabe-se lá se amanhã não estava tudo esgotado.
- Rodrigo: Ah . . . o S. João . . . então o Santo António aqui não vos chega? . . . Ih, pronto, pronto, não faças essa cara, já sei que és do Póрто, Sílbia, carágo . . .
- Cristina: És mesmo alfacinha, Rodrigo. Eu também sou daqui, mas convenhamos, o São João do Porto é outra coisa!
- Rodrigo: Eu sei, pá . . . estava só a meter-me com vocês . . . mas não se esqueçam de tomar um cimbalino por mim, que aqui na capital não temos cá disso . . . E não me apareçam a cheirar a alho!
- Sílvia: Épá, é por essas e por outras que os tripeiros têm fama de responder à bruta . . . tem juízo, homem . . . já devias saber que o Póрто é mesmo uma naçon, e também temos água canalizada pra tomar banho, vê lá tu . . .
- Cristina: Deix'ó lá, não sabe o que perde . . . Olha, temos um bilhete a mais para a peça d'hoje à noite no D. Maria, tem tido boas críticas. Qués vir?
- Rodrigo: Épa . . . adorava, mas a Guidinha, aquela minha colega de curso, convidou-me há uns tempos para ir lá jantar a casa. Mas obrigadinho.
- Cristina: Ah, sim, a Guidinha, aquela que fala pelos cotovelos? . . . Desculpa lá . . . eu sei qu'i éla é uma simpatia de pessoa.
- Rodrigo: Fica pra próxima.
- [LOUDSPEAKER] “*Intercidades com origem em Coimbra-B, linha cinco.*”
- Rodrigo: Até que enfim, estava a ver que nunca mais chegava!
- Sílvia: Bom, nós temos que nos despachar, por causa das obras na autoestrada há mais gente a vir por Alcântara, deve haver engarrafamento de meia-noite. Depois diz qualquer coisa quando o teu irmão se for embora, está bem?
- Rodrigo: Olha, ali vem ele, já estou a vê-lo . . . Está bem. Divirtam-se!
- Cristina: Aquele é que é o teu irmão? Hum . . . nunca me tinhas dito que era tão . . . elegante . . .
- Sílvia: . . . tão giro . . .
- Rodrigo: . . . e eu, não sou? Quem sai aos seus . . . Mas olhem lá, vocês não ’tavam cheias de pressa? . . .
- Sílvia: Hã, pressa? . . . Ah, o trânsito . . . Não faz mal . . .
- Cristina: Pois . . . não faz mal . . . vais apresentar-nos, não vais? . . . Será que ele gosta de teatro? . . .

Greetings, forms of address, and interjections

boa-tarde, “good afternoon.”

xii . . . **caramba**, “Oh . . ., man!”

hã?! “Hum?, what?”. Expression of surprise.

épá!, “man!”. An expletive: does not have any real meaning and is not used in standard Portuguese; it can also be used as a filler. A common variation is “pá.”

- que chatice**, “what a drag!”, “damn!”. Slang and/or colloquialism.
- iih, pronto, pronto**, “Oh, ok, ok.” *Pronto* can also mean “there, there” as an expression of comfort or reassurance to someone who appears to be suffering.
- pois**, “right.” Expressing confirmation of what was just said. In a formal context, it can also mean “because” and introduces a subordinate clause.
- até que enfim**, “at last.” In a slightly more formal context, it can be replaced by “finalmente” (“finally”).
- tchau**, “bye,” “see you.” Portuguese spelling for “ciao”; used in an informal or colloquial context.

Idioms

à bruta	brusquely
de meia-noite	enormous
é outra coisa	it’s something else
é por essas e por outras que	it’s because of [comments like] those that . . .
fala pelos cotovelos	s/he’s a chatterbox
lá	there
não sabe o que perde	doesn’t know what [he] is missing
o raio de [o comboio]	the damn [train]
quem sai aos seus [não degenera]	I’m my father’s son
têm fama de	are reputed to be
vai ver se eu estou na esquina	leave me alone! (lit. “go see if I’m around the corner”)

Vocabulary

The subject matter of this dialogue relates to various specific contexts, and this is reflected in the vocabulary used by the three characters.

Means of transportation and related problems (train, car, traffic)

Alcântara	area of Lisbon, one of the main points of access to the city
autoestrada	highway, motorway
bilhetes de ida e volta	return tickets
cheias de pressa	in a hurry
Coimbra-B	name of the main train station in Coimbra
comboio	train
em primeira	in first [class]
engarrafamento	traffic jam
esgotado	sold out
hora de ponta	rush hour

Intercidades, Pendular	names of two types of inter-regional trains in Portugal
linha	track or platform number
obras	road works
Porto-Campanhã	name of the main train station in Oporto
Santa Apolónia	name of the main train station in Lisbon
trânsito	traffic
Transactions	
guichê	ticket counter
multibanco	ATM, cash dispenser
bicha	line (another word for it is <i>fila</i> due to Brazilian influence, since <i>bicha</i> in Brazil is a pejorative term used to mean “homosexual”)
um bilhete a mais	an extra ticket
Regional rivalry	
o São João	popular festivities celebrating Saint John, for which Oporto is known
tripeiros	people of Oporto (tripe is a popular regional dish)
alfacinha	people from Lisbon
alho	garlic (people used to hit each other with garlic heads, gently, during this festivity)

Pronunciation and regionalisms

Pórto, the accent denotes an open sound as opposed to the semi-closed *o* as in *avô*.

Sílbia, in many northern regions of Portugal *v* is pronounced like *b*. **carágo**,* “shit!”. An interjection typical of Oporto; literally, it means “cock,” here modified from *caralho*. Usually it would not need a written accent: this is used only to indicate the open quality of the vowel.

cimbálineo, Oporto’s word for espresso coffee; the term comes from the Italian espresso machine brand name. The graphic accent is added for pronunciation purposes.

Pórto é [mesmo] uma nação, “Oporto is a nation in itself.”

Expression denoting the regional pride of Oporto people, who have

traditionally seen themselves as the economic center of Portugal (it has certainly been a leading industrial center). In a thick Oporto accent, the final *-ão* tends to be pronounced *-on*.

deix'ó lá, “come on, leave him alone.” The direct object pronoun *o* [u] in “deixa-o” is contracted with the preceding, weaker vowel *a*.
d' hoje, “of today,” “today’s.” The silent *e* in “de” is easily elided by the more open vowel *o*, [ɔ].

Qués vir, “Do you wanna come?” Syllables often get dropped in European Portuguese in colloquial contexts. It should read “Queres vir?”.

qu'i éla, “that’s her.” The final, silent *e* in “que” acquires an *i* quality and becomes part of a diphthong with the semi-open vowel *e* (as in the verb form *ê*) that follows.

pró, contraction of *para* and *o*.

Other vocabulary

elegante, smart, good-looking. Word more common to R2 and R3 discourse, here used as understatement because it refers to the brother of one of the speakers.

giro, cute, handsome. Word more appropriate in R1.

Syntax

agora não se telefona, “Now nobody calls [anyone else] anymore.” The absence of a clear subject is intentional and ironic, since it is evident that he’s accusing the two women of never calling.

apresentar-nos; estou a vê-lo. In European Portuguese the object pronouns are placed after the verb. In the second case, because the pronoun is a single vowel and the verb form ends in *-r* (*ver o*), for ease of pronunciation, changes are made to the spelling: the final *-r* is dropped, the *e* requires an accent to mark the stress, and an *l* is added in front of the *o*.

diz qualquer coisa, “give me a call,” “stay in touch.” Informal imperative followed by an indefinite form that here is meant to come over as less vague than it seems, a suggestion for further contact.

estava a ver que, “I was starting to think that . . .” This construction is used only in informal situations and is typical of European Portuguese; in Brazilian Portuguese the gerund is used instead.

estou a ver, “I see.”

meter-me com vocês, “I was just teasing you.”

não faz mal, “it’s ok, no problem.” The subject of the action referred to is usually understood.

não vos chega?, “isn’t it enough for you?”

olha quem são elas, “look at them, it’s . . . and . . .”

queria, “I’d like to.” The imperfect of *querer* can be used to express intent in the past when there is still reasonable expectation that it will come to fruition, as opposed to the simple past or pretérito perfeito (= I wanted to).

sabe-se lá, “who knows if . . .?”, “how can we know?”

será que ele . . .?, “I wonder if he . . .” The future, in an interrogative sentence, expresses the hypothetical.

só ontem é que acabámos os exames; o que é que fazes. Adding “é que” is typical of colloquial language and merely underscores the action described or alluded to.

vamos antes, “let’s go rather.”

vê lá tu, “can you imagine that . . .”

vou andando, “OK,” “so so,” “nothing new.” Only used in colloquial, informal situations as a reply to a greeting; a common variation is the near-passive “vai-se andando.”

Example of R1 (Brazil): At the mall

- Carla: Fernanda? 'Tá tudo jóia, menina?
 Fernanda: Oi Carla! 'Tá tudo legal, e você?
 Carla: 'Tá tudo bem. E aí, seus pais 'tão bons?
 Fernanda: Sim, eles viajaram para Belo Horizonte, só por um final de semana.
 Carla: Ah, é? Por quê?
 Fernanda: Eles estão visitando minha irmã – ela 'tá tendo dificuldade no primeiro ano na UFMG.
 Carla: Ah, 'tadinha . . .
 Fernanda: Ela 'tá estudando, ‘mais’ estudando muito, mais que no vestibular, e não consegue tirar notas boas . . . e você, que 'tá fazendo aqui no shopping?
 Carla: Eu 'tou procurando um vestido pra festa do Guilherme. 'Cê 'tá indo, né?
 Fernanda: Não sei. . . Realmente não tenho nenhuma razão nem vontade de sair, sabe?
 Carla: Deixa de se' besta, menina! Vai ser bom pra caramba! A última festa que ele deu 'tava um espetáculo – 'tava bombando até as quatro da manhã!
 Fernanda: 'Tá falando sério?
 Carla: Ué, claro! Foi bem legal. E 'cê sabe quem vai também, né?
 Fernanda: Quem?
 Carla: Marcelo!
 Fernanda: Nossa! É verdade? Ele é tão bonitinho, você não acha?
 Carla: Acho, e ele é super-bonzinho também!
 Fernanda: Então 'tá – eu vou!
 Carla: Isso! Bom – agora você tem que me ajudar a escolher um vestido pra hoje à noite.
 Fernanda: Eu gosto daquele preto ali – é super bacana!
 Carla: Não me faz gorda? 'Cê sabe . . . bumbum grande . . .
 Fernanda: Claro que não, menina! Vamo' entrar?

(*In the store*)

- Store clerk: Pois não, em que posso ajudá-las?
 Carla: Por favor, podia me mostrar aquele vestido na vitrine, no meu número?
 Store clerk: Com certeza, acho que vai lhe ficar muito bem . . . a cabine é logo ali . . .
 Carla: Obrigada . . . depois vem dar uma olhada, Fernanda . . .

(*A few minutes later*)

- Store clerk: Então, gostou?
 Carla: Gostei sim, vou levar . . . vou pagar com cartão de crédito . . .
 Store clerk: Com certeza . . . deseja pagar em prestações?
 Carla: Sim, pode ser . . .
 Store clerk: Pode assinar . . . aqui?
 Tudo certo . . . muito obrigada . . . Boa-tarde, volte sempre!
 Carla, Fernanda: . . . obrigada, tchau!
 Fernanda: Viu só, que vestido, vai ficar super elegante . . . Me pega mais logo e aí a gente compra uma torta de chocolate pra levar pra festa, 'tá?
 Carla: 'Tá – boa idéia! Até logo.
 Fernanda: 'Tá, tchau!

Interjections, forms of address, greetings, and pronunciation

ah, ê?, “really?” Expression of incredulity, or interest in hearing more about what is being said.

ah, 'tadinha, “oh, poor thing.” Abbreviated form of *coitadinha*, which is the diminutive form of *coitada/o*. For emphasis, it is sometimes followed by the preposition *de* and a pronoun (*de mim, de ti, de você, dele, de nós, de vocês, deles/delas*).

aí, “then.” Although this adverb, which is sometimes used together with a demonstrative pronoun (“esse livro aí”), generally has a spatial meaning, in Brazil it can also refer to a moment in time, as in “at that time.”

até logo, “see you later.”

'cê, “you.” Abbreviated form of *você*.

isso, “that’s the way” or “there you go.” Expression of approval or confirmation.

'mais, “but,” in this case. The words *mas* (“but”) and *mais* (“more”) can be virtually impossible to distinguish phonetically in Brazil, the only way of telling one from the other being the context in which they occur.

né?, contracted form of *não + é*; only occurs in interrogative sentences.

pois não, “hello.” Form of politeness used by store clerks and generally anyone in the service sector. Although this greeting already contains the formula “May I help you?”, another sentence making it explicit can follow for emphasis.

pra, “in order to.” Abbreviated form of *para*.

se'. Abbreviated form of *ser*. The final *-r* in verbs is often considerably softened or even elided.

'tá, 'tão, shortened forms of *está* and *estão*, typical of colloquial speech.

tudo jóia /legal/bem, “everything’s good/cool/well.”

ué, “oh?!” Interjection expressing slight indignation or surprise, used in most parts of Brazil.

Vamo', “shall we go in?”. It is very common for the final *-s* to be dropped in colloquial speech.

viu só, “did you see?”

Vocabulary and idioms

bacana	nice, cool
besta	silly, idiot
bom pra caramba/um espetáculo	very good
bombando	dancing, partying hard
bonitinho	cute, handsome
bumbum	butt, bum
cabine	dressing room
em prestações	lay-away payment mode, payment by installments
olhada	a quick look
super-bonzinho	very nice
torta	pie or cake
UFMG	Universidade Federal de Minas Gerais
vitrine	store window

Syntax

deixa de sê', “Stop being silly.”

vai lhe ficar muito bem, “it’s going to look very good on you.”

[ter vontade] de sair, to feel like going out.

Example of R1 (state of Goiânia, Brazil): On the road

- Marluí: Quantos mais quilômetros faltam pra chegarmos em Goiás?
 Rossejane: Ah, não sei . . . não enche o saco, Marluí, você sabe quantas vezes já me perguntou isso? Devemos estar chegando perto . . .
- Marluí: Uai . . . não sei, não tou contando, e você devia de saber, sim . . . não tá dirigindo? Tá na cara que não está prestando atenção, faz uma hora quase que matava a gente contra aquele muro . . .
- Rossejane: O quê? Está casuando de mim? Não viu que eu me desviei pra mim não quebrar o carro naquele buraco no meio da estrada? Vê se não enche!
- Marluí: E você, só sabe retrucar . . . que buraco coisa nenhuma. Só pode ser o sol quente na cabeça pra fazer você dizer abobrinha.

- Rossejane: Olha que te dou um tabefe!
 Marluí: Pra isso você ia ter que crescer mais um palmo.
 Rossejane: 'Tá bom . . . beleza . . . não precisa falar mais na minha cabeça, estou de saco cheio das suas tolices . . . Me diz uma coisa, você 'tá cabulando hoje, sua cabeça-de-vento?
 Marluí: Ah, alguém tinha que vir contigo. Estou matando aula, sim, e você deveria estar agradecida de ter alguém para pedalar junto.
 Rossejane: 'Tá bom, 'tá bom . . . Vamos deixar de conversa-fiada. Acho que faltam uns 45 km.
 Marluí: Já não aqueço mais o calor e estou morrendo de fominha.
 Rossejane: Ah, Santo Deus, como é possível? Você acabou de comer uma melancia quando paramos.
 Marluí: Melancia não enche barriga . . .
 Rossejane: . . . e você enche um saco e tanto, hein!? Que matraca, ainda não se calou um minuto desde que partimos.
 Marluí: Pelo menos o tempo passa. Olha só, já estamos chegando. Vamos procurar pouso em uma pensão.

(Some time later)

- Marluí: Estou morrendo de cansaço e fome. A dona da pensão, cadê ela?
 Senhor Raimundo: Ela foi matejar mas volta logo.
 Rossejane: Psiiiiu, o que ele quis dizer com “matejar”?
 Marluí: Ela foi para o mato pegar lenha, sua anta.
 Dona Espírito Santo: ‘Tarde, moças em que posso lhe ajudar?
 Rossejane e Marluí: Queremos pouso e uma comida bem quentinha.
 Dona Espírito Santo: Pouso tem que sobra, mas comida já acabou. Eu servi a janta às 18:00 e até já fui cortar lenha pra amanhã.
 Rossejane: Mas não é possível que não tem nem restodonte.
 Marluí: Que diacho é “restodonte”?
 Dona Espírito Santo: Riririri (*risos*) ela quis dizer “resto de ontem.”
 Rossejane: Nossa . . . Nunca ouviu falar que é chique dizer “restodonte” ao invés de “comida amanhecida”?
 Dona Espírito Santo: Olha gente, eu posso esquentar um arroz e fazer um bife a cavalo.
 Rossejane: Não carece, não, Dona. A gente se vira . . .
 Marluí: Iii, que é isso, Rossejane, a Dona tá oferecendo! . . . Dona, vá e carca a espora nesse bife, estamos passadas de fome!

Interjections, forms of address, greetings, and pronunciation

[es]’tá, [es]’tou, “is” and “am.” These are shortened forms of the Present of the verb *estar*, typical of colloquial speech.

ah, Santo Deus!, “Oh, Holy God!” Equivalent to “Minha Nossa Senhora” or its most common version, “Minha Nossa” or just “Nossa.”

beleza, “ok,” “cool.” The rest of the sentence, “Everything is,” is understood. This is not a form of address.

- dona**, “lady” or “madam.” It can also be used as a form of addressing a woman, less formal than “senhora.”
- iii, que é isso**, “Oh, come on.”
- olha só**, “look.” The Imperative points in the direction where something is to be found. The word *só* has no particular meaning in this context and is only used for emphasis.
- olha, gente**, “look here” or “listen, people.” The Imperative can be used to draw attention to something that is about to be said.
- psiiiu**, “pst!” Discreetly attracting someone else’s attention.
- sua anta**, “you idiot” or “you silly.” Refers to the tapir, a wild animal reputed to be dumb, but the speaker here is using it in an affectionate way. The possessive *sua* in Portuguese has the same function as the personal pronoun “you” in English.
- tarde**, “afternoon.” Short, colloquial version of “boa-tarde.”
- uai**, “huh?”, “well . . .” or “what?”. Interjection expressing slight indignation or surprise, used in some regions of Central Brazil, such as Goiânia and Minas Gerais.

Vocabulary and idioms

tá na cara (col)	it’s obvious
casuando (reg)	making fun of
retrucar (reg)	to answer back
dizer abobrinha	to talk nonsense
buraco coisa nenhuma	no hole – (expressing incredulity: “my ass!”, “my foot!”)
tabefe	slap on the face
tolices	nonsense, silly
cabulando	the same as “matando aula”
matando aula	to miss class on purpose, to play/ be truant
cabeça-de-vento	air-headed, absent-minded
uma matraca (reg)	a chatterbox
conversa-fiada	idle, pointless conversation
cadê (col)	where is . . .?
dona da pensão	the hostel owner, landlady
a janta (col, popular)	the dinner
que diacho (reg)	what the heck, what the devil (<i>diacho</i> = <i>diabo</i>)
um bife a cavalo	a fried egg served on top of a beef steak
se vira	we’ll manage
estamos passadas de fome (col)	we’re way hungry, we’re starving

Syntax

- a gente**, “we.” Often used instead of the personal pronoun *nós*, especially in colloquial speech.
- carca a espora**, “spur on that horse.” The expression attests to the importance of cattle and horses for daily chores in Central Brazil. It naturally suggests that a horse will move faster when motivated with spurs. In this metaphor, the speaker is replacing the horse with the beef steak to express the hope that it will get to her plate quickly. *Carcar* shows how the *l* has been replaced by the letter *r* in some words (originally, *calcar* = to press with one’s foot or heel) in rural areas of Central Brazil.
- devia de saber**, incorrect use of the preposition *de*, something very common indicating very informal context.
- ia**, “would go.” The imperfect is often used instead of the conditional in spoken language.
- não carece, não**, “it’s not necessary.” This archaism has survived in remote or rural areas. The repeated use of *não* at the end of a sentence is characteristic of spoken language.
- não é possível que não tem**, “it’s not possible that there aren’t.” This impersonal construction + *que*, in standard Portuguese, should be followed by the subjunctive, not the indicative.
- não enche o saco**, or only **não enche**, “will you quit . . .?” or “leave me alone!”. Idiom based on the comparison of one’s patience with a bag that gets progressively full. When one has hit the limit, one might say “estou de saco cheio,” “I’m sick of it.”
- pedalar junto**, “to accompany.” The verb “to pedal” is used figuratively and it is understood that the speaker means “junto com você.”
- pra mim não quebrar o carro**, “so that I wouldn’t damage the car.” Construction in which the prepositional pronoun *mim* is used instead of *eu*. This denotes both a regional background and an informal context.
- pra**, “to.” This is the shortened form of the preposition *para*, typical of colloquial speech.

Example of R1/R2 (Creole from Cape Verde): from “Amor di Mundo,” album *Café Atlântico*, Cesária Évora/Teófilo Chantre

In the table below, you will find some lines of a song in Cape Verdean Creole, then the Portuguese words from which the Creole might have derived (this is not a translation per se) and, finally, the rendering into English.

Creole	Portuguese words	English
<i>Nh'amor é doce</i>	<i>Minha amor é doce</i>	My love is sweet
<i>Nh'amor é certo</i>	<i>Minha amor é certo</i>	My love is certain
<i>Nh'amor tá longe</i>	<i>Minha amor está longe</i>	My love is distant
<i>Nh'amor tá perto</i>	<i>Minha amor está perto</i>	My love is close
<i>El tá na mim</i>	<i>Ele está em mim</i>	It is in me
<i>Tcha'm cantá-bo</i>	<i>Deixa-me cantar para</i>	Let me sing to you, my
<i>nh'amor</i>	<i>vós, minha amor</i>	love
<i>Ó mundo</i>	<i>Ó mundo</i>	Oh world

Example of R1/R2 (Creole from Guinea-Bissau): “Bissau kila muda,” from the soundtrack of *Udju Azul di Yonta*, by Super Mama Djombo

In the table below, you will find excerpts of a song in one of the three Creoles from Guinea Bissau, then the Portuguese words from which the Creole might have derived (and only those) and, finally, the translation into English. Please note that the Creoles from Guinea Bissau, depending on the region, have adopted words from European languages other than Portuguese, such as Spanish, French and English, although that is not evident in the text below. African languages from which the Creoles from Guinea Bissau have borrowed vocabulary, and sentence and word structure, include Mandinka and Bigajó; such borrowings are not translated in the Portuguese, but the Portuguese endings that have been tacked on are marked. The general meaning is then rendered into English. We have followed, for the most part, the translation in the CD liner.

Creole	Portuguese words	English
<i>Nha camarada</i>	<i>Minha camarada</i>	My comrade
<i>Nha estimadu amigu</i>	<i>Minha estimado amigo</i>	My dear friend
<i>Nha djumbaidur</i>	<i>Minha -or</i>	My confidant
<i>Nha segredu</i>	<i>Minha segredo</i>	My secret
<i>Sinta bu nota</i>	<i>Senta tu e nota</i>	Sit down and take notice
<i>Kuma e ka na nota</i>	<i>Como eles -nota</i>	How they do not take notice
<i>Si e ká na nota</i>	<i>Se eles -nota</i>	If they don't notice
<i>Anos no na nota mamá</i>	<i>-nós nota, mamã</i>	We do notice mother
<i>E na nota tudu</i>	<i>Eles nota tudo</i>	They notice everything
<i>E findji kuma e ka na nota</i>	<i>Eles finge que eles -nota</i>	They pretend they don't notice

(cont.)

Creole	Portuguese words	English
<i>Bissau kila muda!</i>	<i>Bissau q' ela muda</i> [<i>Aquela Bissau muda</i>]	How Bissau has changed!
<i>Geba riu di nha tera</i>	[<i>Geba</i>], <i>riu da minha terra</i>	Geba, river of my country
<i>Kordon di prata di mamá Guiné</i>	<i>Cordão de prata da mamã Guiné</i>	Silver necklace of mother Guinea
<i>Ora ku bu na intchi</i>	<i>Hora que tu enche</i>	When your waters come back
<i>Bin ku kalma I susegadu</i>	<i>Vem com calma e sossego</i>	Bring us calm and tranquility
<i>Osprindadi di no povu mamá</i>	<i>Hospitalidade do nosso povo, mamã</i>	The hospitality of our people, mother
<i>E na nota tudu</i>	<i>Eles nota tudo</i>	They notice everything
<i>E findji kuma e ka na nota</i>	<i>Eles fingi que eles – nota</i>	They pretend that they don't notice
<i>Montanha nunka, nunka ka na muda</i>	<i>Montanha nunca, nunca –muda</i>	The mountain never changes place
<i>E carga panu</i>	<i>Eles carrega panos</i>	They have brought fabrics
<i>E fala mantenha</i>	<i>Eles fala [que Deus te] mantenha</i>	They have said hello
<i>E tchora e kansa</i>	<i>Eles chora e cansa</i>	They have cried to exhaustion
<i>Di si fidjus kombatentis</i>	<i>De seus filhos combatentes</i>	For their fighting sons
<i>E tchora alegria</i>	<i>Eles chora alegria</i>	They cry of joy
<i>No isa bandera</i>	<i>Nós iça bandeira</i>	We have raised the flag
<i>No tchora sperensa</i>	<i>Nós chora esperança</i>	We have cried hope
<i>No kansa tchora</i>	<i>Nós cansa chorar</i>	We are tired of crying
<i>N ka na tchora mas</i>	<i>– chora mais</i>	I not going to cry anymore
<i>E, n ka na torna</i>	<i>– torna</i>	I am not going to start
<i>Tchora mas</i>	<i>Chora mais</i>	Crying again

Examples of R2: Newspaper articles

Journalistic discourse is characterized in Portuguese, as in English, by the use of impersonal speech in order to create an impression of objectivity on the part of the author. This is to let the events appear to narrate themselves, while the narrated facts are further legitimized in this case by the use of numbers and, finally, quoted speech from witnesses or experts. It is important to note also that written R2 often shares a large amount of vocabulary with R3 in

English. Acronyms are also common in journalistic writing, as in English.

Article from Brazilian daily paper *O Globo*

“Apostando no confronto,” Soraya Aggege, SÃO PAULO

O Movimento dos Trabalhadores Rurais Sem Terra (MST) declarou guerra ontem em resposta à prisão de 16 líderes da organização que comandaram no fim de semana a invasão da fazenda dos filhos do presidente Fernando Henrique em Buritis, Minas Gerais. Líderes do MST ameaçaram com novas ocupações de propriedades e falaram até em fazer uma revolução para distribuir renda no Brasil. Ontem mesmo, às 6h30m, invadiram a Fazenda Santa Maria, administrada por Jovelino Carvalho Mineiro Filho, amigo do presidente e sócio de seus filhos na fazenda de Buritis.

Cerca de 150 sem-terra ocupavam a propriedade, no Pontal do Paranapanema, Extremo Oeste paulista, ontem à noite. As invasões no Pontal fazem parte de uma estratégia do MST de intensificar as ocupações em todo o país. Cerca de duas mil famílias já estão acampadas e com uma lista de 50 propriedades a serem invadidas na região.

– Estamos preparados para ocupar terras em todo o país. Agora é guerra. E já há muita gente pronta, já acampada, para tomarmos mais áreas – disse o líder do MST no Pontal, José Rainha Júnior.

Rainha disse que, para chamar a atenção e politizar a guerra, está disposto a invadir qualquer propriedade, até do senador José Serra, candidato do PSDB à Presidência.

– Rainha se acha impune, acima da lei. E quer fazer política com baderna. Com isso a população não concordará – reagiu Serra.

(*O Globo on-line*, <http://oglobo.globo.com/pais/18380800.htm> Rio, 26 de março, 2002)

Stylistic comments

The “neutral” register at work in this news article is characterized by its absence of colloquialisms and vulgarity as well as its adherence to the rules of “correct” grammar. However, the article reproduces a lot of direct speech, instead of reporting this speech in the third person, so its register may be in part R1.

Vocabulary

apostando, betting on, counting on a predictable outcome.

fazenda, large, ranch-like property with a house for the land owner; crops and/or cattle and horses.

trabalhadores rurais, peasants or rural workers. Their classification as “rural workers” bears the mark of the Marxist/socialist ideology prevalent in the MST.

Movimento dos Sem Terra, official organization of rural, landless, and often jobless workers and their families. They are generally forced to go from one large property to another in the interior and NE states of Brazil in search of rural work, which can be all but non-existent in times of draught. The goal that unites them is to push for land reform as the means to achieve a fairer land distribution. The Fernando Henrique Cardoso governments started a process of redistribution (*assentamento*) by buying small pieces of land and giving them to families. The process has been slow and is often hampered by fraudulent land titles and corrupt officials at the local level; by deliberate massacres incited by landowners; and by some unreasonable demands on the part of the MST. Finally, in an unlikely alliance, some landless workers have been known to get temporary jobs working for the ranch owners and lumber companies, cutting down trees, thus augmenting the size of the ranches and supplying cheap wood even from protected areas such as indigenous reserves.

invasão, ocupação, here, the act of “invading” or “occupying” a *fazenda*.

impune, acima da lei, someone above the law or who acts with impunity.

baderna (col), confusion, chaos.

Syntax

The following verbs/constructions are all typical of R2:

fazem parte de, are part of.

a serem [invadidas], to be [invaded].

concordará, future tense of *concordar*.

reagiu, reacted, responded.

Article from Portuguese weekly newspaper *O Expresso*

“**Rebeldes testam novas pedagogias,**” Margarida Dias Cardoso

André deixou a escola aos 13 anos para ser trolha, mecânico, carpinteiro, «o que calhava». No seu currículo escolar, interrompido no 5º ano, somou três chumbos e incompatibilidades com professores e colegas. Mas três anos de vida activa entre adultos ajudaram-no a perceber que talvez fosse melhor ser estudante e, quando a assistente social lhe bateu à porta, aceitou sem hesitar a oportunidade de participar no PIEF (Programa Integrado de Educação e Formação).

«Já andava arrependido por ter deixado a escola e agora, que aqui estou, quero continuar», admitiu ao EXPRESSO André Marques, à procura, finalmente, de vencer as dificuldades de leitura e escrita para obter o certificado do 6º ano, juntamente com mais 15 colegas

envolvidos nesta experiência educativa, em Santa Maria da Feira. Com idades entre os 13 e os 17 anos, estes jovens têm em comum o abandono escolar, o trabalho infantil e, em alguns casos, problemas de delinquência.

(...)

Num dos concelhos mais industriais do distrito de Aveiro, o PIEF surge no âmbito do Plano para a Eliminação da Exploração do Trabalho Infantil, um programa nacional que envolve os Ministérios do Trabalho e da Educação e contempla um conjunto de iniciativas em várias frentes, da formação profissional ao próprio ensino regular.

(*Expresso on-line*, Lisbon 3/23/2002)

http://semanal.expresso.pt/pais/artigos/interior.asp?edicao=1534&id_artigo=ES54096)

Stylistic comments

The “neutral” register at work in this news article is characterized by its absence of colloquialisms and vulgarity as well as its adherence to the rules of “correct” grammar. It is also visible in the choice of more learned vocabulary and passive voice constructions.

Vocabulary

rebeldes	rebels, troubled kids
testam (<i>testar</i>)	to try, to test
trolha	construction worker in charge of laying bricks, cement, etc.
mecânico	mechanic, probably working with cars or appliances
somou (<i>somar</i>)	to have, to count
chumbos	times somebody fails a course
colegas	classmates
abandono escolar	(R2/R3) dropping out of school
obter	to obtain, to get
experiência educativa	educational experiment
contempla (<i>contemplar</i>)	to contemplate, to consider
um conjunto [de]	a number [of]
várias frentes	different fronts (of action to deal with a problem)

Syntax

o que calhava, whatever one can find.

no seu currículo escolar, in his school life or career.

ajudaram-no, *ajudar + o*, to help him/it. The spelling change is meant to avoid possible confusion with “ajudaram-o,” in which the final syllable would sound like “mo” (contraction of *me + o*).

lhe bateu à porta (*bater* “to knock”): “knocked on his/her door”; often used metaphorically.
andava, from *andar*: feeling a particular way or doing something.
arrependido por, feeling regrets about something. It can also be used with the preposition *de*.
à procura de, looking for.
vencer as dificuldades, to overcome obstacles.
juntamente com mais, together with. “Mais” is not really necessary here.
Com idades entre os [13] e os [17], with ages between . . . and . . .
no âmbito do, (R2/R3) integrado in or under the auspices of.
da [formação profissional] ao [próprio ensino regular], [ranging] from . . . to . . .

Article from Mozambican on-line news service

“Transformação de Armas em Enxadas: Moçambicanos estendem TAE para Angola.”

O Projecto de Transformação de Armas em Enxadas (TAE) vai colaborar na elaboração de estratégias visando a desactivação de esconderijos e recolha de armas em Angola. Segundo Albino Forquilha, coordenador da aludida iniciativa, já foram estabelecidos contactos entre TAE, o Conselho Cristão de Moçambique e a organização “Angola-2000”, para troca de experiências no âmbito do processo de consolidação e manutenção da paz.

Para Forquilha, a participação do TAE em Angola é o início do processo da sua internacionalização. A proliferação de armas é um problema comum para Moçambique, Angola, RD Congo e África do Sul. Desde a criação do TAE foram recolhidas em Moçambique 260 mil armas ou engenhos bélicos. Entretanto, estima-se que haja ainda mais de 10 milhões de armas fora do controlo do Estado. (*Notícias*, 10/08/02)

(August 9, 2002, <http://www.mol.co.mz/noticias/2002/0810.html#01>)

Stylistic comments

The comments made on the language style of the articles from Brazil and Portugal also apply here.

Vocabulary

enxadas	plows
estendem (<i>estender</i>)	to extend, in a metaphorical sense
elaboração	making or elaboration
estratégias	strategies

esconderijos	from <i>esconder</i> “to hide”; places where something is stashed or hidden away
recolha	(re)collection
armas	firearms
manutenção	keeping, maintaining, enforcing
engenhos bélicos	war machines

Syntax

visando, gerund of *visar*: aiming at.

segundo, according to.

aludida iniciativa, aforementioned initiative.

já foram estabelecidos contactos, (passive voice) contacts have been made or established.

no âmbito do, (R2/R3) integrated in or under the auspices of.

problema comum para, a problem common to . . .

estima-se que, (“semi-passive” construction) it is estimated that.

Example of R3 (Brazil): A business letter

Ilmo. Sr.

Daniel Pirelli

Caixa Postal 8157

[postal code-“CEP”] São Paulo, SP

3 de outubro de 2000

Prezado Sr. Pirelli,

Dirijo-me a V. Sa. em resposta ao anúncio para a posição de diretor de marketing, conforme publicado na Folha de S. Paulo do passado dia 26 de setembro.

Estou terminando atualmente o MBA na área de marketing na USP. Anteriormente, concluí na PUC-Rio de Janeiro o bacharelato em gestão e administração de empresas, tendo também feito um estágio de seis meses na Coca-Cola, em Atlanta, nos Estados Unidos da América e, no Brasil, na Petrogás, departamento de vendas. Nessas companhias, desenvolvi campanhas promocionais para diferentes grupos etários e, na Coca-Cola, colaborei na pesquisa preliminar para lançamento de novas bebidas. Em anexo, lhe envio o meu currículo vitae para maiores informações.

Acredito plenamente que minhas habilitações acadêmicas e experiência profissional, e meu conhecimento, em primeira mão, dos Estados Unidos e fluência em inglês me permitirão contribuir a um excelente desempenho na VitaSul.

Grato pela atenção de V. Sa., lhe apresento cordiais saudações.

Atenciosamente,
Luciano Johnson

Stylistic comments

Although the gap between spoken and written language in Brazil decreased significantly throughout the twentieth century, business letters contain some remnants of archaic formulas dating back to colonial times, especially in the forms of address. Other aspects of business-letter style worthy of notice are a preference for nouns where a subordinate clause would be used in spoken language, and for object pronouns and the future tense.

Abbreviations, and opening and closing formulae

atenciosamente, yours sincerely.

grato pela atenção de, literally “thankful for the attention given by [you],” i.e. “thank you for your time and consideration.” The formality of the context justifies the use of the third person here.

Ilmo., abbreviation of “*Ilustríssimo*,” “[your] most illustrious.”

lhe apresento cordiais saudações, “I present my cordial salutations to you,” i.e. please accept my best regards.

MBA, English acronym for Master in Business Administration.

para maiores informações, for further information.

Prezado, Dear [Sir].

PUC-Rio de Janeiro, Pontifícia Universidade Católica do Rio de Janeiro, private, Catholic university with campuses in various cities throughout Brazil; the name of the campus is usually given after the school’s abbreviation and a dash.

USP, acronym for Universidade de São Paulo.

V. Sa., abbreviation of “*Vossa Senhoria*,” “Your Highness” or “My Lord.”

Syntax and vocabulary

anteriormente, **atualmente**, examples of adverbs frequently used in such letters; the *-mente* ending corresponds to the “-ly” ending in English.

C.E.P. (Código de Endereço Postal), zip/postal code.

conforme publicado, as it was published.

desempenho, performance.

fluência em inglês, “my fluency in English.” In Portuguese, the use of the noun *fluência* makes the sentence sound more elegant and formal than simply saying “I am fluent in English.”

grupos etários, higher register form for “age groups.”

permitirão, “will enable [me].”

tendo também feito, “having also done.” This formula, as in English, avoids the necessity of repeating the subject in what would be another “and I also did . . .” clause; the effect is a more economical and elegant style.

Example of R3 (Portugal): A business letter

José Carlos Leite
 e M^a Manuela Fonseca Guedes
 Digiforma Produções
 Praça da República, n^o 12, 5^o Dto.
 [postal code] Porto
 2 de Dezembro, 2001

Ex.mo Senhor
 Dr. António Soares dos Reis
 Presidente do Instituto Multimédia
 Av. Infante Santo, n^o 128, 1^o
 [postal code-“código postal”] Lisboa

Ex.mo Sr. Presidente,

Vimos pela presente agradecer o subsídio de €50 000 que nos foi atribuído, via Digiforma Produções, com vista à realização do projecto “Multimédia e ensino secundário humanístico” para a concepção de actividades piloto a usar na sala de aula.

Tal como especificado nos documentos de candidatura, o projecto decorrerá entre Janeiro e Junho, estando a fase de avaliação prevista para o mês seguinte. Na medida em que o arranque do projecto se encontra dependente da aquisição de material técnico e equipamento, e dado o adiantado da data, agradecemos que V. Ex.cia nos indicasse de que elementos necessita para efectuar o pagamento.

Gratos pela atenção dispensada, e com os nossos melhores cumprimentos,

José Carlos Leite e M^a Manuela Fonseca Guedes
 Digiforma Produções

Stylistic comments

The gap between written and oral styles in European Portuguese is considerably smaller than in Brazil, the former leaving less scope for innovation and flexibility. However, business letters, even in Portugal, still use a number of formulae (opening, closing, place and date of writing) and rules considered important in order to make the desired impression which is, after all, the prelude to a successful transaction or to obtaining a job offer. As in the previous letter, there is a preference for nouns instead of subordinate clauses, and the future and the gerund occur frequently. Note also that sentences and clauses tend to be longer in Portuguese than in English, which is actually a sign of elegance as long as the message remains clear. On the other hand, formal, written Portuguese will avoid demonstratives such as “this” or “that,” especially at the beginning of a sentence or clause, in favor of *tal*, except when the intended meaning is “the former” or “the latter.”

Abbreviations, and opening and closing formulae

We have not repeated comments on expressions and abbreviations that also appear in previous letters, so please refer back to those.

5^o, abbreviation of “quinto andar,” fifth floor.

Av., “Avenida,” “Avenue.”

com os nossos melhores cumprimentos, literally “with our best regards,” i.e. “Sincerely yours.”

Dr., abbreviation of “Doutor,” title used for anybody with a BA degree (“Licenciatura”) in Portugal, in any subject except Engineering (“Eng.”) and Architecture (no abbreviation).

Dto., abbreviation of “direito,” door or apartment “on the right hand side.”

Ex.mo, abbreviation of “Excelentíssimo,” “[Your] most excellent sir.”

gratos pela atenção dispensada: literally, “[we are grateful] for the attention [you have] given [to us],” i.e. “thank you for your time and consideration.”

M^a, abbreviation of “Maria,” given that this extremely common name is usually followed by a middle name.

n^o, abbreviation of “número,” [street] number.

V. Ex.cia, abbreviation of “Vossa Excelência,” “Your highness” or “Your excellency.”

Syntax and vocabulary

actividades piloto, model activities, pilot activities.

arranque, the official beginning.

com vista a, with the goal of, aiming to.

dado o adiantado da data, given how late it is [in the month].

decorrerá, will take place or occur; the use of the future can be justified by the formal context.

efectuar, to make; in a less formal context, “fazer” could be used instead.

estando, the same as “e está” which would be considered less elegant.

necessita, necessitate; in a less formal context “precisa” could be used instead.

pela presente, literally, “by means of the present letter,” i.e. “we are writing to . . .”

Example of R3 (Portugal): a business letter, in reply to the previous one (would probably be on notepaper with letterhead)

Proj. 1377/2001

[sender's name and address if
letterhead is not being used]

Lisboa, 11 de Dezembro, 2001

Ex.mos Senhores

Drs. José Carlos Leite e Manuela Fonseca Guedes

Digiforma Produções

Pr. da República, n°12, 5° Dto.

[postal code-“código postal”] Porto

Ex.mos Senhores,

Com o objectivo de ultimar o processo de atribuição de subsídio a Digiforma Produções, junto remetemos o documento em anexo, que V. Exas deverão assinar e remeter ao Instituto Multimédia com a possível urgência.

Queiram ainda V. Exas esclarecer qual o meio de pagamento preferido, se um cheque emitido sobre o Banco Atlântico, ou uma transferência bancária. Caso optem por este último método, necessitaremos de um número de conta e do NIB correspondente.

Para quaisquer informações adicionais solicitamos-lhes que nos contactem através do telefone (22) 274357.

Com os nossos melhores cumprimentos,

M.^a da Conceição Rodrigues
Chefe dos Serviços Financeiros

Stylistic comments

The comments made about the previous letters apply to this one as well. One aspect worth mentioning here, however, is the use of vocabulary specific to the context of a bank transaction.

Abbreviations, and opening and closing formulae

We have not repeated comments on expressions and abbreviations that also appear in the previous letters, so please refer back to those.

Proj. 1377/2001, Project #1377 of the year 2001: system of indexing references.

documento em anexo, “attached document.”

junto remetemos, “we are enclosing.”

para quaisquer informações adicionais, “Should you need any further information.”

Pr., abbreviation of “Praça,” “Square.”

V. Exas., plural form of “Vossas Excelências,” “Your excellencies.”

Syntax and vocabulary

caso, “in case”; in a less formal context, “se” or “no caso de” could be used.

- cheque emitido sobre**, a check underwritten by [bank].
- com a possível urgência**, “with the possible urgency,” i.e. “at your earliest convenience.”
- com o objectivo de**, “with the goal of,” i.e. “in order to.”
- deverão** (*dever*), “will have to” i.e. “must.” The future tense here is a sign of both the formal context and the urgency of the request.
- necessitaremos de**, “we shall need”; the use of the future can be justified by the formal context.
- NIB**, acronym for “número de identificação bancária,” a number needed to make a wire transfer: routing number.
- processo de atribuição de subsídio**, “the process of attribution of the subsidy.” In formal and written contexts in European Portuguese there is a marked preference for nominal sentence structures, instead of relative clauses and verbs, whenever possible. In English one might say: “[in order] to make available the subsidy that you have been granted.”
- optem**, formal for “choose” or “decide.”
- queiram**, “may you”; the Present Subjunctive is used here to make a polite request: “will you please.”
- remeter**, to send or send back.
- solicitamos-lhes**, “we ask that you please”; in a less formal context “pedir” could be used.
- transferência bancária**, wire transfer.
- ultimar**, to finalize. In Portuguese, in a less formal context “concluir” could be used instead. This would be less formal than its English cognate “to conclude.”

R3 registers

The comments below each text sample are solely intended to explain certain constructions and expand on the vocabulary used. They do not constitute suggestions as to how it should or could have been written otherwise.

Example of R3 (Portugal): Contemporary fiction, Agustina Bessa-Luís, *Um Cão que Sonha*, p. 79

Note on the author

Agustina Bessa-Luís is a writer from northern Portugal, residing in Oporto. Her prolific work contains a gallery of characters from the old world of rural mansions and property owners, generally a small circle where motivations range from pettiness to the instinctive defense of family patrimony, the latter usually undertaken by strong women. One could also devise a different category of works by this masterful writer, a category including research on historical characters such as Inês de Castro, in *Adivinhas de Pedro e Inês*. Nonetheless, one consistent characteristic stands out in all her works: the keen observation of

human nature. If her characters are at times heroic it is not due to their virtues, because they have just as many faults as virtues; both together result in a dense web of human contradictions. Often the challenge which this writing presents is proportional to how easily the reader can follow and accept the author's maxims, which condense bits of wisdom about human nature. *Um Cão que Sonha* is said to be less dense in style.

“A favor da sua insignificância Léon tinha aquela tranquilidade que parece moderação e é uma ausência de paixões. Os pecados mortais nunca o interessaram o bastante para criar com eles situações. Nem compreendia como isso pudesse ser. Desejar a mulher do próximo, por exemplo, não tinha qualquer sentido porque essa mulher não existia mais. Andavam por toda a parte com aquela horrível audácia que elas tinham e que reclamava atenção como se a atenção fosse uma posta de peixe para grelhar. Com Léon, as coisas corriam bem e não chegavam a reclamar os seus direitos diante dele. Limitavam-se a olhar para ele com *secura* – a *secura* de que as mulheres são capazes quando não pressentem uma vítima, mesmo a amada vítima, sempre a mais distinguida entre todas.”

Stylistic comments

In this extract the writer seems to prefer nouns and relative pronouns to clauses that would be closer in style to colloquial language (e.g. hypothetically, “Léon era um homem insignificante e ao mesmo tempo tranquilo. Parecia moderado, mas na verdade só porque não tinha paixões”). In this way, the emphasis is on the qualities themselves, not on the subject, and the writing acquires a sententious, maxim-like tone.

Syntax and vocabulary

as coisas corriam bem (*correr*), “things generally went well.”

com *secura*, “in a dry manner.”

como se a atenção fosse uma posta de peixe para grelhar, “as if attention were a slice of fish ready to go on the grill.”

limitavam-se a (*limitar*), “they would simply/only . . .”

para criar com eles situações, here the standard word order has been changed for emphasis; otherwise, it would read “para criar situações com eles.”

Example of R3 (Guinea Bissau): Contemporary prose, Abdulai Sila, *Mistida*

Note on the author

Many authors from Lusophone Africa, in addition to writing in Creole, also write in Portuguese, in a manner closer to the European variant and, in fact, often eloquently displaying old-fashioned or very formal

constructions no longer frequently used in Portugal. Such authors include Germano Almeida (Cape Verde) and Abdulai Sila (Guinea Bissau). The text below, by the latter, is taken from his 1997 novel *Mistida*, a noun which seems to derive from the Maninka verb *misti*, “to want, wish, desire very intensely,” plus the Romance suffix *da*.

“Era uma guerra que tinha começado algumas semanas antes. Sem nenhuma declaração formal, sem nenhum aviso prévio sem ultimato. E ainda por cima sem a sua presença. Foram apenas alguns dias de febre que a obrigaram a ausentar-se do beco onde passara quase uma vida inteira sentada e logo tinha sido desalojada. Quando voltou, o lixo já se tinha apossado do seu lugar. Pediu-lhe que se retirasse, mas foi ignorada e desprezada. Protestou um dia inteiro.

No dia seguinte, o lixo tinha crescido o dobro. Passou os dias a vigiar, uma semana inteira. Na escuridão da noite o monte ia crescendo, noite após noite, sem parar. Finalmente pediu socorro, não podia lutar sozinha contra forças tão poderosas e cruéis. Os reforços solicitados e mil vezes prometidos ficaram pelo caminho minado pelo egoísmo e pela pobreza de espírito. A solidariedade requerida perdeu-se nos confins do desespero.”

(Abdulai Sila, *Mistida*, Bissau: KuSiMon, 1997)

(Excerpt taken from http://www.terravista.pt/ilhadomel/4201/paginas/abdulai_sila.htm)

Stylistic comments

In this novel, the striking element is style, understood as more than a knowledgeable choice and combination of vocabulary, or syntax. While the lines flow with grace and skillful ease, the narrative’s strength resides in the use of images, situations, and characters: the somber atmosphere, a destitute old woman with a mysterious past, forever awaiting a change of regime; the town’s trash which keeps growing mysteriously; the stereotypical, heartless dictator. If we are inclined to call these elements allegorical, Sila reminds us that there is nothing allegorical about them – they are the country’s very reality.

Vocabulary

ausentar-se, to take leave or be absent. Another way of saying this, in a more colloquial register, would be “quando não estava lá.”

aviso prévio, prior warning. Although the adjective is unnecessary, it is often used idiomatically with this noun, adding emphasis.

beco, small alley.

logo, no sooner, immediately after.

desalojada, thrown out, dislodged.

lixo, garbage, trash.

que se retirasse (*retirar*), (R2/R3) [I asked it] to withdraw.

desprezada, the object of scorn or spite.

o dobro, twice as much, double.

pediu socorro (*pedir*), asked for help.

solicitados, (R3) requested.

minado, mined.

requerida, (R3) requested.

confins, confines.

tinha começado (*começar*), it had started.

tinha-se apossado (*apossar*) “had taken possession, had taken over.”

A synonym would be “apoderar-se.”

Syntax

e ainda por cima, “and on top of that.” An expression less formal than many in this text, probably marking that the perspective is now the woman’s, not the narrator’s.

passara, (R3) “had spent”; slightly more formal or literary than the compound form “*tinha passado*.” This form is now rarely used in spoken discourse.

ia crescendo, “was growing slowly but surely.”

Example of R3 (Brazil): Contemporary fiction, João Ubaldo Ribeiro, *Viva o Povo Brasileiro*, p. 15

Note on the author

João Ubaldo Ribeiro long since earned the right to be controversial, while being critical and funny at the same time. Like many other contemporary Brazilian authors, he has a perfect command of differing language registers, from the editorial or *crônica* to the new historical novel, among others. The extract below contains a mix of both those subcategories, as it chronicles cultural traits of the author’s fellow Brazilians while placing the action in the early colonial period.

“O comportamento das almas inopinadamente desencarnadas, sobretudo quando muito jovens, é objeto de grande controvérsia e mesmo de versões diametralmente contraditórias, resultando que, em todo o assunto, não há um só ponto pacífico. Em Amoreiras, por exemplo, afirma-se que a conjunção especial dos pontos cardeais, dos equinócios, das linhas magnéticas, dos meridianos mentais, das alfridárias mais potentes, dos polos esotéricos, das correntes alquímico-filosofais, das atrações da lua e dos astros fixos errantes e de mais centenas de forças arcanas—tudo isso, por lá, as almas dos mortos se recusem a sair, continuando a trafegar livremente entre os vivos, interferindo na vida de todo dia e às vezes fazendo um sem-número de exigências.”

Stylistic comments

Here the author is poking fun at one of the deeply rooted superstitions shared by many, that Brazil is the epicenter of a particular geomagnetic force. While the topic he chose could easily make it into a *crônica*, the register and tone used clearly show that this text is not one. Among the characteristics here is the abundance of adjectives qualifying the many nouns specific to the semantic field of mysticism and astrology, some of them possessing a root from learned Latin (“arcanas”). Moreover, the author relates this in the voice of a serious narrator chronicling scientific facts, but not without spicing up the tone a bit by making the phenomenon he is describing sound quite comical.

Vocabulary

alfridária, influence exerted by the planets, according to Arab astrologists.

arcanas, ancient. Term derived from learned Latin.

desencarnadas, [the souls] that have come out of the body.

diametralmente contraditórias, perfectly or absolutely contradictory.

é objeto de, is the object of.

inopinadamente, unexpectedly. This term is rarely used in spoken discourse.

pacífico, devoid of controversy.

potentes, powerful.

Syntax

alquímico-filosofais, “alquímicas e filosofais,” “alchemical and philosophical.” In the case of two adjectives closely related in meaning but supplementing each other, the first adjective is used in the masculine singular form whereas the second agrees in gender and number with the noun.

faz com que, “it has as a result.” Not exclusive to R3.

resultando que, “from which it ensues that,” “causing.”

trafegar, to negotiate or do business.

Example of R3 (Mozambique): Contemporary fiction, Paulina Chiziane, *O Sétimo Juramento*, p. 29

Note on the author

Paulina Chiziane is part of the newer generation of Mozambican writers who grew up during the post-independence years, having experienced the internal struggles and external wars that often spilled over from countries like South Africa. She is also one of the first female writers to openly voice in her writing a critique of the society/societies,

at once modern and traditional, that allow the repression of women. Even though other female writers, such as Lília Momplé, had denounced this and worked to correct it, the critique of repression comes across most powerfully and unabashedly in Chiziane's writing.

“Clemente recorda os mitos das aulas de história universal. Mitos de bestas e santos. De deuses e demónios. Mitos do amor à lua cheia. Mitos de dragões e papões. Foi o mito de Rómulo e Remo que criou Roma. Hércules. Zeus. Vénus. Foi o mito do nascimento de Shaka que criou o império Zulu. O mito da criação do mundo, segundo o Génesis, governa metade do planeta Terra e criou a superioridade do branco sobre o preto, do homem sobre a mulher. O mito de mpfukwa torna os ndaus temidos e destemidos. O mito da encarnação governa o universo dos bantus.

Vera volta ao quarto do Clemente vigiar o seu repouso. Encontra bisavó e bisneto em conversa fechada. Interfere.”

Stylistic comments

In the excerpt, as in much of the author's writing, elements of African cultures and other mythologies co-exist with the modern world, its technologies and a post-colonial condition. The latter, or real, dimension is served by a terse and directly economical style, as in the last paragraph, made up of very short periods and expressive words.

Vocabulary

Most vocabulary in the excerpt relates to the mythologies of different cultures:

bantus, the Bantu are a very large ethnic (and language) group and can be subdivided into smaller less encompassing ones. One of the Bantu language groups most represented in Lusophone Africa is the Kimbundu.

branco, preto, words for colors, here designating groups of individuals with those phenotypes. These words are not capitalized in Portuguese even when they are used as nouns.

dragões, papões, dragons and bogeymen.

Génesis, spelled as in English except for the graphic accent.

Hércules, Zeus, Vénus, Greek deities. Their names are normally spelled identically in Portuguese and English, except for the graphic accents. “Zeus” is pronounced as a diphthong in Portuguese (as in the personal pronoun *eu*), unlike in English.

mpfukwa, hero of the Ndau people. The Ndau are part of the larger Bantu family and live in an area of inner Mozambique and Zimbabwe.

Rómulo, Remo, Romulus and Remus, the founders of the city of Rome.

Shaka, Chaka: Zulu warrior king who was feared by many other ethnic groups and the British colonial troops in South Africa.
temidos e destemidos, feared and fearless. This is a play on words, as they share the same root.

Example of R3/R1 (Angola): Contemporary fiction, Manuel Rui, “A Grade,” *1 Morto E os Vivos*, p. 23

Note on the author

Manuel Rui Monteiro was born in Huamba in 1941 and his works combine social realism with biting irony and humor. Among the topics examined in his works, some of the most important include race and racial differences, social violence, and the use of symbolic characters. His concern with the social conditions of the working classes and the poor, combined with his erudite background (he completed his law degree in Coimbra), become obvious both in his use of common colloquial speech in his dialogues and in his highly ironic use of images.

“Primo Alfredo, custa-me mesmo e nem sei como dizer . . . devem estar chocas.”

Salvador percebera. O parente se atravessara embora num esgar de estremeço na cabeça parecia solução, no fim os olhos parados, a garganta engolida de contra vontade e foi por aí não obstante a estalar e bem espumada, inspiração dele, fundo, buracos do nariz maiores e pensar nos passados purgantes que as velhas costumavam obrigar só de uma vez. E antes de abrir outra, pegou na garrafa do primo, entornou três dedos no copo e provou. Devia ser assim a consideração e confiança, às vezes havia um azar e podiam pensar que foi veneno.

“Não é choca. Estão velhas. Vocês lá no Lubango também andam à rasca com cerveja?”

“Agora não. Já se vai vivendo.”

“Pois aqui é isto e pra arranjar só no matanço.” (. . .) “Nem dá para perceber. Todos os dias o primo se andar por aí vê caixas de cerveja de lata a andarem de um lado para o outro. Donde saem? Da puta que os pariu porque eu não as bebo. Quem as bebe? Eu não sou.”

“Mas de algum modo elas saem, primo.”

Salvador descascava agora jinguba, cabisbaixo, em flagrante desalento, quase vergonha. Não tinha nada para oferecer ao parente. E Alfredo não viera de mãos a abanar.

Syntax and vocabulary

a estalar e bem espumada, (R1) “[the beer rolled down his throat as if it were] clicking and foaming [like fresh beer].”

a garganta engolida de contra vontade, “his throat swallowed against his will.” The syntax makes it sound as if it was the throat

- that was swallowed, as the object, not the agent, of the act of swallowing.
- à **rasca**, in a tight spot or a difficult situation, here due to the scarcity of beer.
- andarem de um lado para o outro**, “circulating,” “being transported back and forth, everywhere.”
- chocas** [cervejas], flat, lacking carbonation.
- consideração**, [out of] courtesy or consideration.
- custa-me mesmo**, “it is really difficult for me.”
- da puta que os pariu**, (R1*) “[out of] the whore that spit them into the world,” i.e. from hell.
- de mãos a abanar**, literally “with his hands waving,” i.e. empty-handed.
- entornou três dedos no copo**, “he poured some three-fingers worth into the glass” (i.e. approximately two inches).
- esgar de estremeço**, a facial expression denoting pain, here accompanied by a head “tremor.”
- inspiração dele, fundo**, “[his] breathing in, deep.”
- jinguba**, Kimbundu word for peanuts.
- Lubango**, city in Angolan province of Huíla, NE of Luanda.
- não obstante**, “nevertheless.”
- no matanço**, “in the killing,” i.e. exploiting the situation with the seller, illegally.
- obrigar só de uma vez**, “[they use it] to make us take it all in one gulp.”
- purgantes**, purgatives/cleansing substances (for the digestive tract).
- solução**, “hiccup.”
- viera**, simple form of the pluperfect; alternatively “tinha vindo,” had come.

Example of R3 (Portugal): Contemporary fiction, António Lobo Antunes, *Exortação aos Crocodilos*, p. 8

Note on the author

In António Lobo Antunes’s many novels two thematic axes stand out, psychiatry and colonial Africa, and his writing reveals in great detail his first-hand knowledge of both fields. However, the mastery with which he represents the elusive thought processes of his characters, organizes the narrative, and examines topics central to Portuguese culture and history deserves far greater attention than his biography.

“a minha avó, em lugar de bater-me, mandou às empregadas que fechassem a porta, envolveu-me no cheiro de aguardente, esticou a orelha à direita e à esquerda, as galinhas e os salgueiros calaram-se, respeitosos, conforme o mundo se calava a uma ordem sua, cochichou

– Não contes a ninguém vou ensinar-te um segredo
sabia tudo, lia revistas em espanhol, conhecia as estrelas
Aldebarã

aconselhava testamentos e partos, despedia cozinheiras, adivinhava os relâmpagos, jurava que na Galiza chove o tempo inteiro e nascem rosas no mar, sempre vestida de branco como uma noiva antiga desde que o meu avô morreu, exigia que lhe trouxessem as flores de laranjeira numa redoma fosca, poisava a redoma no colo e ninguém se atrevia a falar, as travessas deslizavam sem ruído, o meu tio doente dos pulmões apagava a telefonia, o meu pai empoleirado na caixa registradora ajeitava de imediato a gravata.”

Stylistic comments

In a style reminiscent of the stream of consciousness, Lobo Antunes skillfully maneuvers between characters’ perspectives and their almost involuntary memories. He sets his prose as free as he can from the constraints of writing conventions: hence the sparse use of commas and periods, and the ambiguity of marks of direct speech, in the excerpt above. Another important trait in this excerpt is the poetic tone conveyed by the use of certain images, such as the flowers’ evocation of innocence, and by the veiled suggestions that the supernatural is at work (e.g. the grandmother’s clairvoyance and the roses in the sea).

Syntax and vocabulary

em lugar de, instead of.

envolveu-me, “she enveloped me.”

esticou, “she stretched,” i.e. listened attentively.

conforme, as, when.

cochichou, (R1) whispered.

Aldebarã, a star in the constellation Taurus; town in Galicia.

adivinhava os relâmpagos, “she guessed when lightning was coming.”

noiva antiga: “a bride like in the old days.”

flores de laranjeira: the orange tree flower, symbol of purity worn by brides.

redoma fosca: foggy, not completely transparent glass dome.

poisar, to put down [same as *pousar*].

colo, lap.

travessas, serving plates.

apagar, to turn off.

telefonia, the old name for a radio set.

empoleirado, sitting on, perched like a bird on a stick.

caixa registradora, cash register.

ajeitar, to straighten up.

2 Written expression

This section covers general rules for the written variant of the Portuguese language.

Note: a minor orthographic difference between European and Brazilian Portuguese is that the former writes a single ζ where the latter would use a çç thus *infracção/infracção*. This alternative spelling is rendered thus: *infra(c)ção*.

2.1 Accentuation

2.1.1 Diacritical marks

There are four diacritical marks in Portuguese from Portugal and five in Brazilian Portuguese.

1. The tilde (˜) is used to indicate a nasalized vowel or group of vowels.

Examples:

João (John)
corações (hearts)
maçã (apple)

2. The circumflex accent (ˆ) is used to indicate the pronunciation of a semi-closed a , e , o . This vowel is always stressed.

Examples:

português (Portuguese)
avô (grandfather)
Antônio (Br) (Anthony)
ignorância (ignorance)

The circumflex is also used to indicate double vowels pronounced separately:

lêem (they read)
perdôo (I forgive)

In Brazil, the circumflex is also used in the following word:
vôo (I fly, the flight)

3. The “grave” accent (`) is used to indicate the contraction of the preposition *a* (to) with the feminine definite article *a* (the) or the following demonstrative adjectives and pronouns (that/those): *aquilo*, *aquele*, *aquela* and their plural forms.

Examples:

Vou à praia (I am going to the beach)

Mostrei o apartamento àquele homem (I showed the apartment to that man)

4. The “agudo” accent (´) is used to indicate stress in the following cases:

(a) Words ending in a consonant plus *a*, *e*, or *o* or in their plural forms, which are not stressed on the penultimate syllable.

Examples:

metáfora (metaphor)

diérese (dieresis)

avó (grandmother)

(b) Words ending in *-m*, *-l*, or *-z* or their plural forms, when the last syllable is not stressed.

Examples:

álbum (album)

alguém (somebody)

fácil (easy)

fáceis (easy, pl)

mártir (martyr)

(c) The plurals of words ending in stressed *-ol* and *-el*.

Examples:

papéis (papers)

espanhóis (Spaniards)

(d) To distinguish otherwise homograph words.

Examples:

saía/saia (I/he/she was leaving, or “Leave!” (command)/“skirt”)

país/pais (country/parents)

5. The dieresis (¨) is used only in Brazil to show that the letter *u* is pronounced after the consonants *q* and *g* and before the vowels *e* and *i*.

Although it is still in use, the spelling reform of 1994 agreed between Portugal and Brazil officially abolished the dieresis.

Examples:

agüentar (to tolerate)

freqüente (frequent)

2.1.2 Stress

The written accent in Portuguese is used to indicate either stress on, or the quality of, a vowel sound. In this section, stressed vowels are underlined. In Portuguese, each vowel is counted as one syllable and so are the diphthongs. The diphthongs in Portuguese are:

non-nasal: *ai, au, ei, iu, oi, eu, ui*

nasal: *ãõ, ãe, õe.*

Usually the pair *ou* represents a single sound, not a diphthong. It is pronounced like the *o* in [o] *avô*.

Any vowel with a written accent is the stressed vowel in that word.

Words ending in the vowels *-a, -e, or -o*, or these vowels followed by *-s, -m, or -ns*, are stressed on the penultimate syllable, unless they have a written accent. The stress for the vowels *a, e* and *o* is written with the circumflex accent (ˆ) if they precede *-m* or *-n* and sometimes *-s*.

Examples:

casa (house)

telefones (telephones)

escuro (dark)

caminham (they walk)

paisagens (landscapes)

agá (the letter H)

português (Portuguese)

café (coffee)

econômico (Br) (economical) [In this case a semi-closed *o* is pronounced]

economico (Pt) (economical) [In this case a semi-open *o* is pronounced]

Words ending in *-u, -i*, or these vowels combined with *-m, -s*, or *-ns*, or any other consonant, are stressed on the last syllable unless another vowel has a written accent.

Examples:

tatuu (tattoo)

anis (anise)

comi (I ate)

rapaz (boy)

fácil (easy)

líder (leader)

Any vowel which is written with the tilde (˜) is nasalized (as occurs in the pronunciation of *m* and *n* in English) and stressed.

Examples:

João (John)
 corações (hearts)
 anã (female midget)

All words stressed on a syllable preceding the penultimate syllable have a written accent.

Examples:

metáfora (metaphor)
 fósforo (match)

Some monosyllables have a written accent to distinguish them from their homographs or homophones.

Examples:

por	(for)	pôr	(to put)
mau	(bad)	mão	(hand)
de	(of, from)	dê	(give) (formal command)
nos	(us)	nós	(we)

Some monosyllables are never written with graphic accents. Some examples are:

1. Definite and indefinite articles: *o/a/um/uma*, etc.
 2. Clitic pronouns: *o, a*, etc.
- Example:
 O vi a semana passada (I saw him/it last week).
3. Relative pronouns: *que, qual, quais*, etc.
 4. Conjunctions: *mas, nem*, etc.
 5. Prepositions: *por, de, a, com, em*
 6. Forms of address: *dom, frei, seu (senhor)*
 7. The possessive pronouns: *meu, teu, seu*
 8. Monosyllabic personal object pronouns: *mim, ti, nos*
 9. The monosyllabic subject pronouns *tu* and *eu*
 10. The Greek letter *phi*: *pi*
 11. Nasalized monosyllables

Examples:

bem (well/good)
 bom (good)
 tem (he/she/it)

tom (tone)
som (sound)

The following monosyllables are always written with an accent:

cá (here)
lá (there)
má (bad [f])
mês (month)
pá (shovel)
pé (foot)
pó (dust)
quê (what)
sé (cathedral)
só (alone)
trás (behind)
três (three)
lã (wool)

Monosyllabic third-person plurals (many verbs have these) have a written accent:

dão (they [you pl] give)
põe (you put/he puts)
são (they [you pl] are)
têm (they [you pl] have)
vêm (they [you pl] come)

The following monosyllabic adverbs are written with a tilde:

não (not)
tão (as/so)

The plural forms of words ending in *-ais* are accented.

Example: raízes

In the case of double vowels (-oo, -ee), the first is written with the circumflex accent if it is stressed.

Examples:

vôo (I fly) (Br)
lêem (they read)

Words in which the following vowels are pronounced separately (*ai*, *au*, *ei*, *iu*, *oi*, *eu*, *ou*) are also accented.

Examples:

saúude (health)
paíís (country)
reúunem (they gather)

Words ending in the following vowel combinations, which do not form diphthongs (i.e. are pronounced as one syllable) have written accents if they are not stressed on the penultimate syllable (*-ea, -eo, -ia, -ie, -io, -ua, -ue, -uo*).

Examples:

ciência (science)

água (water)

Mário (Marius)

2.2 Punctuation

Portuguese punctuation is generally similar to English. Commas are more frequent, especially in parenthetical expressions; semi-colons are rarely used. Parentheses tend to be used instead of dashes. Unlike Spanish, Portuguese does not use inverted question and exclamation marks to introduce questions or exclamations. For examples of punctuation the reader is referred to the text excerpts in the Introduction.

2.3 Hyphenation

Hyphens are generally used to connect independent words into compound words while at the same time preventing them from becoming a single block. Hyphens are less frequently used in Brazil than in Portugal. Below, you will find different groups of compound words.

1. Compound words may be composed of a noun and an adjective, two nouns, or two adjectives, and may include a verbal form or a preposition:
arco-íris (rainbow)
cor-de-rosa (pink)
chapéu-de-chuva (umbrella)
latino-americano (Latin American)
pára-choque (car bumper)
nadador-salvador (lifeguard)
fim-de-semana (weekend)
bom-dia (good-morning)
2. Words formed with the following prefixes: *anti-, auto-, neo-, proto-, pseudo-, semi-, pan-, mal-, vice-, contra-, pre-, pós-*, among others.
auto-retrato (self-portrait)
pseudo-intelectual (pseudo-intellectual)
semi-selvagem (semi-savage)

3. Words formed with the prepositions *sem*, *além*, *aquém*, *recém*.
além-mar (overseas)
aquém-fronteiras (within borders)
recém-nascido (newborn)

4. With the expression *haver de* (the periphrastic future). This hyphen is omitted in Brazil.
Hei-de viajar este Verão.
I will travel this summer.

Hão-de dizer a verdade.
They will tell the truth.

5. When the indirect and direct object and reflexive pronouns follow the verb.
Dá-me o livro.
Give me the book.

Eu vi-o.
I saw it/him.

Sentei-me.
I sat down.

6. The hyphen is also used to separate syllables at the end of a line of text, breaking before a consonant-vowel cluster: *ja-ne-la* (window). In the case of consonant clusters, if the cluster cannot begin a word, then it is separated: *cons-ti-tui-ção* (constitution).

If a hyphenated word occurs at the end of a line of printed text, the hyphen is repeated at the beginning of the next line, as in this example containing the word “arco-íris”:

*Quando eu era criança, acreditava que a magia do arco-
-íris se devia a uns pássaros da floresta,
que traziam cada arco de sua cor quando parava de chover.*

When I was a child, I used to believe that the rainbow’s magic was all due to little birds from the forest who’d each bring an arch of a different color when it stopped raining.

2.4 Capitalization

Capital letters in Portuguese are used as in English for personal names, names of places, holidays, abbreviations, and terms of address. Months and academic subjects are capitalized only in European and African Portuguese.

Biologia (Pt) (Biology)

Brasil (Brazil)

Janeiro (January)

Natal (Christmas)

Oceano Atlântico (Atlantic Ocean)

Senhor Gomes (Mister Gomes)

Capital letters are used in the titles of books and articles as in English.

Capital letters are not used in the following cases:

1. Days of the week: segunda-feira (Monday)
2. Nationalities: alemão (German)
3. Languages: português (Portuguese)
4. After a colon.

3 Vocabulary

3.1 Misleading vocabulary

3.1.1 False cognates

The following words are false cognates (often called false friends) because, while they closely resemble English words, their meanings are completely different or are used in different contexts.

Portuguese	English equivalent	English cognate	Portuguese equivalent
a(c)tualizar	to update	to actualize	realizar
a(c)tualmente	currently	actually	na verdade
advertir	to warn	to avert	impedir, evitar
agenda	planner	agenda	intenção baseada em convi(c)ções pessoais ou políticas
agonia	death pangs	agony	agonia, angústia
agonizar	to die	agonize	preocupar-se com
aplicar	to apply (pressure, method, knowledge, etc.)	to apply	concorrer
artífice	craftsman	artifice	estratagema
assistir	to attend an event, to watch (Br)	to assist	atender, ajudar
atender	to assist	to attend, go to	ir (à escola, espe(c)táculo, reunião, etc.)
barraca	shack	barracks	quartel
bordar	to embroider	to board to border	embarcar fazer fronteira com

coerente	consistent, congruent	coherent	bem organizado
colégio	private secondary school (Pt); high school (Br)	college	universidade
comando	military force; remote control	(to/a) command	mandar; ordem, elogio
compasso	(pair of) compass(es) (for drawing circles)	compass	bússula, compasso
compreensivo	understanding	comprehensive	muito abrangente, completo
concurso	contest	concourse	ponto de encontro
condu(c)tor (Pt)	driver	conductor	maquinista de comboio/trem
confidente	confidant	confident	confiante
consistente	thick (substance)	consistent	constante
conto	short story (contemporary)	account; a count (title of nobility)	conta; um conde
curso	degree, diploma	course (take a course)	matéria, aula (fazer uma aula)
dece(p)ção	disappointment	deception	engano
descendência	offspring	descent	ascendência
desgraça	(great) misfortune	disgrace	um evento que arruína moralmente a reputação de alguém
desmaio	fainting spell	dismay	profunda apreensão; desânimo
divertir	to entertain	to divert	desviar
editar	to publish	to edit	corrigir
educado	well-mannered	educated	instruído, cultivado
eficiente	efficient	efficient	eficiente (people); eficaz (things)
empregar	to saturate	to get pregnant	engravidar
encontrar	to find, to come across somebody or something	to encounter	defrontar-se com (problemas)
esquisito	strange	exquisite	refinado
estar constipado	to have a cold (Pt)	to be constipated	ter prisão de ventre (Pt); estar constipado (Br)
eventualmente	in the event that, may be, possibly	(to happen) eventually	acabar por acontecer

êxito	success	exit	saída
fábrica	factory	fabric	tecido
formar-se	to graduate	to form	formar, fazer
hábil	skilled	able	capaz
ignorar	not to know	to ignore	não prestar atenção a (± intencionalmente)
ingênuo	naïve	ingenious	engenhoso; de imaginação viva
injuriar	to insult	to injure	ferir, machucar (Br)
intoxicar	to poison	intoxicate	embebedar-(se)
introduzir	to insert	introduce	apresentar
largo	wide	large	grande
leitura	reading	lecture	apresentação, palestra
livraria	bookstore	library	biblioteca
longe	far	long	longo
mandato	political term; legal order; mission	mandate	ordem, missão; súmula dos desejos investidos num representante eleito
miséria	poverty	misery	tristeza
molestar	to bother; to mistreat (rare)	to molest	abusar sexualmente
novela	short story (especially in the nineteenth century)	novel	romance
obsequioso	generous with favors	obsequious	lambe-botas, untuoso
ordinário	vulgar	ordinary	vulgar; habitual
papel	sheet of paper; role, character (in play)	paper	papel; trabalho, apresentação (academic paper or presentation), document
parentes	relatives	parents	pais
porco	pig; dirty	pork	carne de porco
preservativo	condom (Pt)	preservative	conservante
pretender	to want to do or achieve	to pretend	fingir
prevenir	to warn	to prevent	evitar
processar	to process along; to bring a civil (law) suit (Pt)	to process	processar, dar andamento a
puxar	to pull	to push	empurrar

realizar	to make real; to do	to realize	dar-se conta
romance	novel	romance	situação amorosa; envolvimento amoroso
sensível	sensitive	sensible	sensato
simpático	nice, friendly	sympathetic	compreensivo; solidário com uma causa/com alguém
tábua	plank	table	mesa
transpirar	to sweat	to transpire	ser descoberto, descobrir-se, vir a público

3.1.2 Homographs

Some Portuguese words have two different meanings depending on their gender.

	Feminine	Masculine
cabeça	head (of the body)	head (of an organization)
capital	capital city	money
corte	royal court	cut
cura	cure	priest
defesa	defense	fullback (football or soccer)
editorial	publishing house	editorial
final	final match	end
gênese	origin	Book of Genesis
guarda	guard (the group), female guard	male guard
guia	document accompanying a person (e.g. a child) or a product to be transported; pass (allowing transport); a guide (book giving practical advice); female guide	male guide; touristic guidebook
moral	ethics; moral (of a story)	state of mind, spirits (high, low)
polícia	police force, a female officer (Pt)	a male officer

rádio	radio station	radius, radio set
recruta	recruitment in general, female recruit	male recruit
vogal	vowel	member (of a board or professional association/ organization [Pt])

Special homographs

The following words differ in spelling only in the use of written accent marks. Their meanings, however, are quite distinct.

cópia	he/she/it/you copy(ies)	cópia	a copy
demos	we gave	dêmos	1 st person plural subjunctive or imperative of <i>dar</i>
habito	I inhabit	hábito	habit
opera	he/she/it/you operate(s)	ópera	opera
nos	us; to us	nós	we
passeamos	we stroll/we strolled (Pt)	passeámos (Pt)	we strolled
pelo	por + the article <i>o</i>	pêlo	body hair
pode	he/she/it/you can	pôde	he/she/it/you could
por	for	pôr	to put
secretaria	a main office	secretária	secretary's desk, administrative assistant (f); secretária eletrônica = answering machine (Br)
esta	this	está	he/she/it/you is (or "are")
para	to, for	pára	he/she/it/you stop(s)
vos (Pt)	to you (plural)	vós (Pt)	you (rural usage in Portugal)

The following words are pronounced slightly differently but are spelled exactly the same (i.e. none of them is written with a graphic accent). The use and pronunciation are dictated by context.

More open		More closed	
mo<u>l</u>ho	I dip, a bunch	mo<u>l</u>ho	sauce
<u>e</u>ste	East	<u>e</u>ste	this

3.1.3 Homophones

The following words are spelled differently but pronounced the same.

à	to the (preposition <i>a</i> + article <i>a</i>)	há	there is
acento	accent	assento	seat; I agree (from the verb <i>assentir</i>)
açular	to provoke (usually with animals)	assolar	assail (as in “the storm or bad weather is assailing Detroit”)
asso	I roast	aço	steel
bucho	stomach (col)	buxo	bush
caçar	to hunt	cassar (Br)	to cancel (a license)
ceio	I eat supper	seio	breast; in the midst of
círio	candle	sírio	Syrian
concerto	concert	conserto	I repair, a repair
conselho	a piece of advice	concelho	an administrative division (like a municipality)
consular	consular	consolar	to console
coto	stub, stump	couto	refuge
cozer	to boil (cook by means of boiling water)	coser	to sew
elegível	eligible	ilegível	illegible
eminente	eminent	iminente	imminent
era	I/she/he/it was; an era	hera	ivy

graça	fun; grace	grassa	third person singular of <i>grassar</i> (to affect or assail)
nós	we	noz	walnut
passo	a step; I pass	paço	royal palace; official residence of an ecclesiastical or other dignitary
peão (Pt)	pedestrian; pawn (Pt)	pião (Pt)	toy top
roído	past participle of <i>roer</i> (to chew)	ruído	noise
sem	without	cem	one hundred
senso	sense	censo	census
sinto	I feel	cinto	belt
tenção	intention	tensão	tension
traz	he/she/it brings	trás	behind
viagem	trip	viajem	they/you (pl) travel (present subjunctive form)
voz	voice	vós	you (rural usage in Portugal)

Conjunctions and homophones

The following are pronounced the same but have different meanings and spellings depending on whether they are connected or separated.

contanto	as long as	com tanto	with so much
conquanto	even though	com quanto	with so much, with how much
acerca de	about	há cerca de	there are about (+ quantity)
porque	because	por que	why
senão	otherwise	se não	if not
contudo	however	com tudo	with all

3.1.4 Regional variations

Many words have different usages or meanings depending on the geographical region or country of origin of the speaker. If the word is used in Portugal but not Brazil, or vice versa, then there is no alternate meaning given.

Portuguese word	English concept
academia (Br)	gym
autocarro (Pt)	bus
bica (Pt)	shot of espresso
bicha (Br)	homosexual (vulgar)
bicha (Pt)	line
bicho (Br)	term of endearment (col)
bicho (Pt)	animal
bilhete (Br) (Pt)	travel ticket
bilhete (Pt)	ticket for admittance
bonde (Br)	cablecar
cachorro (Br)	dog
cachorro (Pt)	puppy
cardápio (Br)	menu
carteira (Pt)	purse/wallet
carteira de identificação (Br)	card (as in identification card), work record
colar (Br)	to cheat in an exam
colar (Pt) (Br)	to glue together
comboio (Pt)	train
coroa (Br)	older adult with gray hair (col); spinster (col)
coroa (Pt) (Br)	crown
curtir (Br)	to enjoy oneself
curtir (Pt)	to tan leather; to make out (col)
eléctrico (Pt) (Br)	electric/electrical (adj)
eléctrico (Pt)	cablecar
ementa (Pt)	menu
ementa (Br)	list
fato (Pt) (Br)	fact
fato (Pt)	suit
geladeira (Br)	refrigerator
geleira (Pt)	ice chest; freezer
gelar (Br)	to freeze; to ignore
gelar (Pt, Br)	to freeze
ginásio (Br)	high school; indoor stadium
ginásio (Pt)	gym
gozar* (Br)	to have sexual pleasure

Portuguese word	English concept
gozar (Pt)	to make fun of, to have fun
grosso (Br)	rude
grosso (Pt) (Br)	thick
ingresso (Br)	ticket for admittance
ingresso (Pt) (Br)	college admission
malhar (Pt) (Br)	to forge metal
malhar (Br)	to work out (col)
moça (Br)	girl
moça (Pt)	girl (rural usage)
ônibus (Br)	bus
polaca (Br)	prostitute; person of very pale complexion
polaca (Pt)	Polish (f)
polonesa (Br)	Polish (f)
pomba! (Br)	interjection similar to “Darn!”
propina (Br)	small bribe
propina (Pt)	college fees
puto (Pt)	child
puxa! (Br)	interjection similar to “Wow!”
quadra (Br)	street block; tennis court
rapariga (Br)	prostitute
rapariga (Pt)	girl
sítio (Br)	small plot of land with a house
sítio (Pt)	particular location
trem (Br)	train
turma (Br)	a group of friends
turma (Pt) (Br)	class of students

3.2 Transitional phrases

Transitional phrases are necessary for the smooth movement between, and connection of, related ideas within a sentence, or paragraphs in written discourse, and are also highly useful in spoken discourse to fill the gaps between uttered ideas. These include many conjunctions, adverbial expressions, and prepositional phrases.

- **acho** (I think / I guess)

Deixei as chaves no meu escritório, acho.

I left the keys on my desk, I think.

- **apesar de** (in spite of the fact, although)

Apesar de não ter dinheiro, fui de férias.

In spite of the fact that I did not have money, I went on vacation.

-
- **assim** (in this manner / like this)

Se deve abordar o assunto assim.

The matter needs to be approached this way.

- **como é que hei-de dizer?** (how should I say/put it?) (Pt)

O meu vizinho é, como é que hei-de dizer, muito problemático.

My neighbor is, how should I put it, quite difficult.

- **de qualquer jeito / de qualquer maneira** (in any case)

Não sei se vou, ou não. De qualquer maneira, telefono-te.

I don't know if I will go or not. In any case, I will call you.

- **de jeito nenhum/de maneira nenhuma** (no way, under no circumstances)

De jeito nenhum! Não autorizo que os meus filhos passem toda a noite na discoteca.

No way! I won't let my children spend the whole night at a club.

- **digamos** (let's say) (Pt)

Encontramo-nos, digamos, às sete da noite.

We'll meet, let's say, at seven at night/in the evening.

- **embora** (even though)

Embora fizesse frio, fui à praia.

Even though it was cold, I went to the beach.

- **e depois** (then – meaning “directly following” / so what)

Corremos toda a tarde e depois tivemos de descansar.

We ran all afternoon and then we had to get some rest.

Não fui a trabalhar ontem, e depois?

I didn't go to work yesterday, so what?

- **em primeiro lugar** (first of all)

Em primeiro lugar, temos que fazer as reservas de avião, e depois pensaremos no hotel.

First of all, we need to make the plane reservations, then we will think about the hotel.

- **em resumo** (to sum it up)

Em resumo, *Romeu e Julieta* é a história de um amor trágico.

To sum it up, *Romeo and Juliet* is the story of a tragic love.

- **ena pá** (Pt) (an interjection like ‘Wow!’)

Ene pá, que golo! (col)

Wow, what a goal!

- **então** (then)

Se vocês não estão bem aqui, então podem ir embora.

If you are not content here, then you can leave.

... e então, o que você acha dessa idéia? (Br)

So what do you think of this idea?

A organização de defesa do consumidor entrou em a(c)ção, e aí a indústria se mostrou mais cooperante.

The consumer protection organization stepped in, and then the industry showed itself more co-operative.

- **é que** (it is that / (to be) the one)

Você é que ficou encarregado de levar a Sílvia

You are the one who was supposed to pick up Silvia.

- **já que / posto que** (since)

Já que tu conhece Isabel, tu bem que podia me apresentar para ela. (Br) (col) (reg)

Since you know Isabel, you could introduce me to her.

- **mas** (but)

Quero ir ao concerto, mas não posso.

I want to go to the concert, but I can't.

- **na realidade / na verdade** (actually)

Não sou muito novo, na realidade tenho cinquenta anos.

I am not so young, actually I am fifty.

- **ou seja** (in other words)

O candidato conseguiu mais do que cinquenta por cento dos votos, ou seja ganhou com maioria absoluta.

The candidate won more than fifty per cent of the vote; in other words, he won (the election) by an absolute majority.

- **pá** (used to fill pauses in spoken discourse, similar to “huh” or “hmm” but also as an expletive like “man,” “dude.” It is not used in Brazil)

Estás bom, pá? (col)

How are you doing, dude?

- **pelo contrário** (on the contrary)

Não está claro. Pelo contrário, está bem confuso.

It isn't clear. On the contrary, it's quite confusing.

- **pois** (because)

O director não compareceu, pois houve qualquer mal-entendido.

The director didn't show up, because there was some misunderstanding.

-
- **pois é** (yeah/then / well / of course)

Pois é, ja sei que vais a Lisboa.

Yeah, I already know that you are going to Lisbon.

- **pode-se dizer** (one can say)

Pode-se dizer que as relações pessoais são mais fáceis no Brasil do que nos Estados Unidos.

One can say that personal relations are easier [to establish] in Brazil than in the USA.

- **por conseguinte** (therefore)

Eu sou brasileiro, por conseguinte falo português.

I am Brazilian, therefore I speak Portuguese.

- **por exemplo** (for example)

Paulo viaja muito, por exemplo, a semana passada foi a Angola.

Paulo travels a lot, for example, last week he went to Angola.

- **por isso** (for that reason / that's why)

Jorge é muito mentiroso, por isso a gente não acredita nele.

Jorge is a terrible liar, that's why people don't believe him.

- **por último** (lastly)

Plane(j)amos a viagem e por último faremos as malas.

We'll plan the trip, and lastly, we will pack our bags.

- **por um lado . . . por outro lado** (on the one hand . . . on the other hand)

Por um lado, é importante estudar muito, por outro lado, também é preciso a gente se divertir.

On the one hand, it is important to study, on the other hand, it is also important to have fun.

- **quer dizer / isto é/ou seja** (in other words)

Os chefes de estado encontraram-se para discutir o desarmamento, o seja para discutir quem vai ter que desactivar os seus mísseis nucleares.

The heads of state met to discuss disarmament. In other words, to discuss who will need to deactivate their nuclear missiles.

Note: "i.e." is not used in Portuguese, since the letters coincide with the abbreviation for "isto é."

- **quer . . . quer** (whether or not)

Quer ela queira, quer não, vai ter de fazer isso.

Whether she wants to or not, she will have to do that.

- **vamos lá ver** (let's see) (Pt)

Vamos lá ver, quem pode ocupar-se de trazer as bebidas?
Let's see, who can take care of bringing the drinks?

3.3 Prepositions

3.3.1 *A*

Note: The preposition *a* joins in a contraction with the definite articles and the demonstrative adjectives and pronouns.

Vou às cinco.

I am leaving at five.

Fomos àquele cinema.

We went to that theatre.

3.3.1.1 Basic Meanings

(a) Destination, direction (generally corresponds to English “to”)

Vou a Lisboa.

I am going to Lisbon.

(b) Point in time (clock time)

Daqui a um mês parto para São Paulo.

A month from now, I will leave for São Paulo.

(c) Location (meaning “at”)

O homem estava ao seu lado.

The man was at her side.

(d) Upon

The idea of upon + gerund is expressed with *a + o + infinitive*

Ao chegar, viu que não tinha os documentos.

Upon arriving, he realized that he didn't have the documents.

3.3.1.2 *A* in time expressions

A corresponds to English “at,” or “in,” or “on” in many expressions relating to time

a 5 de setembro	on the fifth of September (in this case the “a” is optional)
à meia-noite	at midnight
a partir de	from a certain point onwards
a ponto de	on the verge of
a primeira vista	at first sight

a princípio	at the beginning
a tempo	on time, in time
ao almoço	at lunch
ao fim e ao cabo	in the end
ao longo de	along (spatial or temporal)
ao meio-dia	at noon
ao mesmo tempo	at the same time
aos poucos	little by little
às tantas da noite (Pt)	in the middle of the night
às vezes	at times
daqui a uma semana	a week from now
dia a dia	day by day
passo a passo	step by step
pouco a pouco	little by little

A expressing rate

a granel (Pt)	without any order/in large quantities
a oitenta à hora	at eighty kilometers per hour
a peso	by weight
à razão de	at the rate of
ao litro	by the liter
dois a zero	two-nil (for sports scores)

A expressing manner

à francesa, espanhola, etc.	in the style of the French, the Spanish etc.
a frio	after cooling down emotionally, without any warning
à imagem de	in the image of
à maneira de	in the style of
à minha maneira	my way
a pente fino	very thoroughly
a propósito	by the way, regarding
a sério	really; seriously
à toa	aimlessly
à tona	on the surface
à vista	in sight
à vontade	at ease
ao contrário	on the contrary
ao Deusdará	left to luck
às cegas	blindly

bacalhau à Braz	cod prepared according to the Braz recipe
comer à farta;	to eat a great amount
comer à tripa	
forra (Pt)	
de cabo a rabo	from one end to the other
de mal a pior	from bad to worse
fazer ao acaso	to guess, to do without thinking
passar a ferro	to iron
passar a limpo	to make a clean copy

A expressing position

à frente	ahead
ao lado	next to
à esquerda, à	on/ to the left/right
direita	
à porta	by the door
ao longe	far away
a luz de	in the light of
ao nível de	at the level of
ao pé de	close to
levar/ter ao colo	to hold close to the body
ao ar livre	in the open
ao alcance de	within reach of
ao fundo	in the back
à sombra	in the shade
ao sol	in the sun
ao telefone	on the telephone
ao ombro	over the shoulder
a meio	halfway
ao meio	in the middle
a bordo de	on board

Verbs which combine with *a*

aceder a	to give into; to access
acorrer a	to run to
acostumar-se a	to become accustomed to
amarrar a	to tie to
antepor-se a	to put (oneself) in front of
atrever-se a	to dare to
atribuir a	to attribute
brincar a	to play a role
brindar a	to toast
ceder a	to cede to, yield to
chegar a	to arrive in/at/on; to reach

chegar-se a	to move close to (a person)
cheirar a	to smell of
colar-se a	to cling to
começar a + inf	to begin
comprometer-se a	to promise to
concorrer a	to apply (to a school or for a job)
contribuir a (Br)	to contribute
dar (uma coisa) a	to give (something) to
decidir-se a	to decide to
equivaler a	to be the equivalent of
escrever a alguém	to write to someone
escusar-se a	to avoid
falar a	to speak to
faltar a	to miss (e.g. an appointment)
ficar a	to remain
incentivar/exortar/ incitar a	to incite to
ir a	to go to
ligar a	to pay attention to
limitar-se a	to limit oneself to
negar-se a	to refuse to
obedecer a	to obey
obrigar a	to oblige
orar a	to pray to
pertencer a	to belong to
presidir a	to preside over
reagir a	to react to
recorrer a	to resort to
reduzir a	to reduce to
referir-se a	to refer to
regressar a	to return to
remeter a	to send to
render-se a	to surrender to, to resign oneself to
renunciar a	to quit
resistir a	to resist
responder a	to respond to
restituir a	to give back to
saber a	to taste like
sair a	to take after
seguir-se a	to follow (only objects, ideas, concepts)
sobreviver a	to survive
tardar a	to take long to
temer a Deus	to fear God
tender a	to tend to
tornar a	to repeat
vir a	to come to

3.3.2 *Ante*

Ante is only used in a formal contexts to mean “in the face of” or “in the light of” or “faced with”:

Ante as provas do crime ele confessou.

Faced with the evidence, he confessed.

Ante is also used in the expression *pé ante pé* which means “to walk on tiptoe”:

O ladrão caminhou pé ante pé para não acordar ninguém.

The burglar walked on tiptoe in order not to awake anyone.

3.3.3 *Antes*

Antes means “before” and can be used alone and combined with *que* and *de* in order to express the following meanings:

antes	Alone, <i>antes</i> expresses “in a past time” or “before” Antes, eu morava em Lisboa. Before, I lived in Lisbon.
antes de	<i>Antes de</i> + a noun Telefona-me antes do almoço. Call me before lunch. <i>Antes de</i> + inf. Não deves comer antes de nadar/ personal infinitive. (Pt) You should not eat before swimming.
antes que	<i>Antes que</i> + verb (always combines with subjunctive, but not with future subjunctive) Antes que te esqueças, põe o frango no forno. (Pt) Before you forget, put the chicken in the oven. Chamei os bombeiros antes que o incêndio alastrasse. I called the fire department before the fire spread.

3.3.4 *Após*

Após means after, and combines only with nouns and pronouns. *Após* is used mostly in formal speech and written language:

Examples:

Após as notícias, transmitiram uma sessão plenária do governo.
After the news, they broadcast a government plenary session.

Após alguns momentos de reflexão, o advogado falou para os jurados.

After a few moments of reflection, the lawyer spoke to the jurors.

3.3.5 *Até*

Até means “until,” “up until,” or “up to,” and is used also with *que*.

até	<p><i>Até</i> combines with nouns and pronouns.</p> <p>Até ele me pedir desculpa, não vou falar com ele. I’m not talking to him until he apologizes to me.</p> <p>Não vou ao Brasil até ao Natal (Pt)/até o Natal (Br). I am not going to Brazil until Christmas.</p> <p>Portugal vai do Minho até ao Algarve. Portugal extends from the Minho region to the Algarve region.</p>
até + personal infinitive	<p>Até vocês chegarem, vou estar aqui. Until you arrive, I will wait here.</p>
até que + verb	<p><i>Até que</i> combines with the subjunctive or the indicative.</p> <p>Até que você me dê as chaves, não posso usar o carro. I can’t use the car until you give me the keys.</p> <p>Houve muitos terremotos até que o vulcão explodiu. There were many earthquakes up until the volcano exploded.</p>

Expressions with *até*

Até amanhã.
See you tomorrow.

Até já.

See you in a bit / See you soon.

Até logo.

See you later.

Até mais.

See you.

Até para a semana.

See you next week.

3.3.6 *Com*

Com means “with” and is used in a similar fashion as well as in a large number of expressions:

Examples:

Gosto de café com leite.

I like coffee with milk.

Fui com o meu filho ao circo.

I went with my son to the circus.

Expressions with *com*

com certeza

certainly

com pés e cabeça

understandable; well-organized

Com licença

Excuse me

Com os diabos (pronounced “C’os diabos”)

Damn it!

Verbs which combine with *com*

acabar com

to finish with

apertar com

to put pressure on (someone)

arcar com

to bear

assustar-se com

to be frightened of

atordoar-se com

to be confused by

avistar-se com

to meet with

barafustar com

to argue with

berrar com

to shout at

carregar com

to carry (also figuratively “to bear with”)

chatear-se com

to be annoyed with

combater	to combat
comover-se com	to be moved by (emotionally)
competir com	to compete with
conformar-se com	to conform to/with; to resign oneself to
contar com	to count on someone
cortar relações com	to cut off relations with
cruzar-se com	to bump into (somebody)
dar-se com	to socialize with, to be friendly with
decepcionar-se com	to be disappointed by
desculpar-se com	to excuse oneself for, to excuse oneself by
desgustar-se com	to be displeased by
discutir com	to argue with
distrair-se com	to be entertained by; to be distracted by
divertir-se com	to have fun by, to have fun with
drogar-se com (+ name of drug)	to use (drugs)
emburrar com (Pt)	to be annoyed with/by
empatar com	to tie with (as in a sports score)
encantar-se com	to be fascinated with
encontrar-se com	to meet with (somebody)
enervar-se com	to be upset by
entender-se com	to get along with
entreter-se com	to be entertained by
entusiasmar-se com	to become excited about
envaidecer-se com	to become vain about
espantar-se com	to be surprised by
fascinar-se com	to be fascinated by
fazer com que	to achieve through manipulation; to do everything in one's power to achieve (something)
fundir-se com	to merge with
gozar com	to make fun of
gritar com	to yell at
harmonizar-se com	to be appropriate for
haver-se com	to deal with (in a negative way)
horrizar-se com	to be horrified at
impacientar-se com	to be impatient with/at
implicar com	to pick on
importar-se com	to be concerned with

importunar (-se) com	to bother (someone) with
indignar-se com	to become indignant because of
inquietar-se com	to become worried about
judiar com	to pester
ligar com	to match (as in clothing)
melindrar-se com	to get one's feelings hurt by
meter-se com	to tease
namorar com	to have an amorous relationship with
namoriscar com	to date
não poder com	to find unbearable
parecer-se com	to resemble (either physically or in character)
pegar-se com	to have an argument with
rabujar com	to be grumpy with
ralar-se com (Pt)	to worry about
reatar com	to reestablish a relationship with
refilar com	to complain in an annoying way
regalar-se com	to take great pleasure in something
resignar-se com	to be resigned to
rivalizar com	to be the rival of
simpatizar com	to like someone
solidarizar-se com	to share solidarity with
sonhar com	to dream of
transigir com	to tolerate
zangar-se com	to get mad at

3.3.7 *Contra*

Contra corresponds to “against,” both physically and figuratively.

Examples:

Os revolucionários eram contra a ditadura.

The revolutionaries were against the dictatorship.

Puseram os móveis contra a parede para poder pôr o tapete novo no centro da sala.

They put the furniture against the wall in order to lay the new carpet in the middle of the living room floor.

A equipa do Brasil jogou contra a Argentina.

The Brazilian team played against Argentina.

O caso do estado contra Pinochet nunca se realizou.

The case of the State versus Pinochet never reached the courts.

3.3.8 *De*

Note: The preposition *de* joins in a contraction with the definite articles, the third person personal pronouns, and the demonstrative adjectives and pronouns.

Examples:

Meus pais estarão aqui a partir das cinco.

My parents will be here from 5 o'clock on.

Estes discos são dela.

These records are hers.

Daquele homem não podes esperar nada. (Pt)

You cannot expect anything from that man.

Basic uses

1. Movement from (in space and time)

Examples:

Eu voltei da capital ontem.

I returned from the capital yesterday.

Vou estar aqui das seis às oito.

I will be here from six o'clock to eight.

2. Composition

Example:

Prefiro móveis de madeira a de metal.

I prefer wooden furniture over metal.

3. Origin

Example:

Sou de Lisboa.

I am from Lisbon.

4. Combined with *o que* in order to express “than” in comparisons

Example:

Sou mais responsável do que o meu irmão.

I am more responsible than my brother.

5. Used with the superlative in order to express “in” or “on”

Example:

O pobre diabo julga-se o homem mais importante do mundo.

The poor fool considers himself the most important man on earth.

6. Possession

Example:

Este livro é do Luís.

This book is Luis's.

7. Price and measurement

Examples:

Uma nota de dez reais.

A ten-real bill.

Um selo de dois euros.

A two-euro stamp.

Um garrafão de cinco litros.

A five-liter bottle/jug.

A temperatura prevista para hoje é de 30°.

The estimated high temperature today is 30°.

A maratonista correu uma distância de quarenta quilômetros em menos de duas horas.

The marathon runner ran a distance of forty kilometers in less than two hours.

8. Means of transportation

Example:

Nunca ando de avião, tenho medo.

I never take the airplane, I'm afraid.

Note: To indicate "by foot" or "on foot," the preposition "a" is used.

Example:

Eu ando a pé sempre que posso.

I go on foot/walk whenever I can.

3.3.8.1 Expressions with *de*

aberto de par em par	wide open
atirar-se de cabeça	to jump in head first
cair (estar) de bruços	to fall on one's face
de cavalo para burro	from good to bad
de certa maneira/de certo modo	in a way
de cor e salteado	by heart (memorized)
de costas	from the back
de frente	facing
de graça	free (for no money)
de guarda	on guard
de lado	sideways

de longe	by a long shot
de luto	in mourning
de mal a pior	from bad to worse
de maneira nenhuma	no way
de memória	from memory, by heart
de novo	again
de ouvido	by ear
de passagem	just passing by, in passing
de presente	as a gift
de propósito	on purpose
de qualquer maneira	carelessly; in any case
de repente	suddenly
de sobra	extra
de um lado para o outro	from one side to the other
de um trago	in one gulp
de uma vez	at once, once and for all
de vez em quando	once in a while
estar de bom humor, de mau humor	to be in a good mood, in a bad mood
estar de cama	to be sick in bed
estar de castigo	to be grounded
estar de cócoras	to be crouching
estar de costas	to have one's back turned
estar de joelhos	to be on one's knees/to kneel down
estar de pé	to be standing
estar de visita	to be a visitor

3.3.8.2 Verbs which combine with *de*

abdicar de	to abdicate
aborrecer-se de	to become bored with (of)
abster-se de	to abstain from
abstrair-se de	to ignore (a thing)
abusar de	to abuse
acabar de (+ inf)	to finish
achar de	to think of (only used in questions)
afastar-se de	to distance oneself from
apagar-se de	to get off of
aperceber-se de	to realize
apoderar-se de	to take control of
aproveitar-se de	to take advantage of
aproximar-se de	to get close to
armar-se de	to arm oneself with

arrepender-se de	to regret
assegurar-se de	to make sure of
atestar o depósito de/com	to fill the gas/petrol tank with
avisar de	to warn about
cansar-se de (+ inf)	to tire of
capacitar-se de	to convince oneself of
carecer de	to lack
chamar alguém de (Br)	to call (someone something)
cobrir de/com	to cover with
coibir-se de	to abstain from
condoer-se de	to be sorry for
constar de	to consist of
convencer alguém de	to convince someone of
corrigir-se de	to correct (such as a bad habit)
curar-se de	to recover from (an illness)
dar de (+ inf)	to decide to do something
datar de	to date from
decorrer de	to result from
deixar de (+ inf)	to stop or quit (+ gerund)
demitir-se de	to resign from
depende de	to depend on
deprender-se de	to infer from
desacostumar-se de	to no longer be accustomed to, to lose the habit of
descer de	to descend from, to get off
de(s)colar de	to take off from (aircraft)
desconfiar de	to distrust, to suspect
descrever de	to not believe (in)
desenvencilhar-se de	to get rid of
desfazer-se de	to rid oneself of
desistir de	to give up
despedir-se de	to say goodbye to
despojar-se de	to get rid of
destacar-se de	to stand out from
destoar de	to not match
desviar-se de	to veer from
diferir de	to differ from
discordar de	to disagree with
disfarçar-se de	to disguise oneself as
dispensar alguém de	to excuse someone from
dispor de	to possess
dissuadir alguém de	to dissuade someone from
distar de	to be at a distance from
distinguir de	to distinguish from
divorciar-se de	to divorce (somebody), get divorced from
duvidar de	to doubt

encarregar-se de	to be in charge of
entender de	to know about
envergonhar-se de	to be embarrassed about
escapar-se de	to escape from
escarnecer de	to make fun of
esquecer-se de	to forget about
falar de	to talk about
fartar-se de	to become fed up with
fazer de (+ noun)	to play the role of
gabar-se de (Pt)	to boast about
gostar de	to like
gozar de	to enjoy
ilibar de	to exonerate
impedir alguém de (+ inf)	to prevent someone from (+ gerund)
importar-se de (+ inf)	to mind
infestar de	to infest with
inibir-se de	to be inhibited from
inteirar-se de	to find out about
lembrar-se de	to remember
libertar alguém de	to free someone from
 mascarar-se de	to disguise oneself as
morrer de	to die of
mudar de (casa, roupa, dire(c)ção)	to move (as in housing), to change clothes, to change direction
munir-se de	to arm/equip oneself with
não passar de	to be no more than
necessitar de	to need
ocupar-se de	to dedicate oneself to
orgulhar-se de	to be proud of
padecer de	to suffer (from)
parar de (+inf)	to stop (+ gerund)
partir de	to leave
passar de	to be after (a certain time)
pensar de	to think of (only in questions)
perceber de	to know about
perder-se de	to lose sight of (someone)
precisar de	to need
prescindir de	to do without
proteger-se de	to protect oneself from
queixar-se de	to complain about
recompor-se de	to recover from
recordar-se de	to remember
reputar alguém de	to consider someone to be
ressentir-se de	to be resentful of

rir-se de	to laugh about
saber de	to know about
sair de	to leave
salpicar de /com	to sprinkle with, to splash with
separar de	to separate from
servir de	to serve as
servir-se de	to use
sofrer de	to suffer from
subsistir de	to survive on
surgir de	to come out of
suspeitar de	to suspect
tingir de	to dye (with something)
valer-se de	to take advantage of
vingar-se de	to avenge
viver de	to live on (as in food); to live off (earned or unearned income)
zombar de	to make fun of

3.3.9 *Desde*

Desde corresponds to English “from” in both space and time. It always indicates a movement from a point.

Examples:

Vim a pé desde minha casa até a universidade. (Br)

I came on foot from my house to the university.

Moro aqui desde 1977.

I have lived here since 1977.

3.3.10 *Diante de*

Diante de means “before” or “in front of” in space

Examples:

Cláudia colocou-se diante do espelho.

Claudia moved in front of the mirror.

O meu carro está diante de tua casa.

My car is in front of your house.

Note: *Diante* without *de* is used in some expressions to mean “from now on” in time

Example:

Daqui para diante não tolerarei os seus insultos.

From now on I will not tolerate your insults.

3.3.11 *Em*

Note: The preposition *em* joins in a contraction with the definite articles and the demonstrative adjectives and pronouns.

Examples:

No inverno chove muito.

In the winter it rains a lot.

Neste caso, devemos ter muito cuidado.

In this case, we should proceed with caution.

3.3.11.1 Basic uses with location

Em corresponds to the English preposition “in,” “at” or “on,” “inside (of).”

1. Containers

Example:

O meu porta-moedas está na bolsa.

My wallet is in my purse.

2. Rooms

Example:

Comeremos na sala hoje.

We will eat in the living room today.

3. Buildings

Example:

Havia uma exposição no Mosteiro dos Jerónimos.

There was an exhibition in the Jeronimites Monastery.

4. Geographic locations

Examples:

O meu irmão mora no Algarve

My brother lives in the Algarve.

Eu gostaria de viver no estado de São Paulo.

I would love to live in the state of São Paulo.

Sempre há cobras neste parque nacional.

There are many snakes in this National Park.

Em Lisboa, há muitas casas de fado.

In Lisbon there are many *fado* houses.

Não há vida em Marte.

There is no life on Mars.

Note: The names of some cities and most countries are preceded by the definite article

Em with location

em casa	at home
em casa de	in the home of
na casa de	in the house of
na cervejaria	at the beer bar
na escola	at school
na praia	on the beach/at the beach
no bar	at the pub/café
no cinema	at the theater/at the movies
no teatro	at the theater
no trabalho	at work

3.3.11.2 Basic uses with time

Periods of time**meaning “during”**

Example:

*A Volta ao Mundo em Oitenta Dias.**Around the World in 80 Days.*

1. With days and dates, including holidays

Examples:

Na segunda-feira, vamos ao Porto.

On Monday we are going to Oporto.

A guerra acabou no dia 13 de setembro.

The war ended on September 13.

No Natal come-se muito peru.

At Christmas people eat a lot of turkey.

2. With months and seasons

Examples:

Vamos a Moçambique em Junho.

We are going to Mozambique in June.

No verão faz muito calor.

It is very hot in summer.

3. With years

Examples:

Nasci em 1965.

I was born in 1965.

O Brasil tornou-se independente no ano de 1822.

Brazil became independent in the year 1822.

4. With centuries

Example:

No século XXI, descobrir-se-á uma cura para o cancro. (Pt)

In the twenty-first century, they will discover a cure for cancer.

Em with time expressions

de agora em diante	from now on
hoje em dia	nowadays
neste momento	in/at this moment
no futuro	in the future
no passado	in the past
no presente	in the present

Expressions with Em

crer em Deus	to believe in God
de quando em quando	once in a while
em breve	soon
em busca de	in search of
em carne viva	bare flesh (when the skin is scraped off)
em chamas	on fire
em confiança	in confidence
em dire(c)to	live (as in a broadcast)
em especial	in particular
em férias	on vacation
em ferida	wounded; with the skin scraped off
em festa	in celebration (this expression is used to describe a town when it celebrates its saint's feast: Lisboa está em festa em Junho. Lisbon celebrates its patron saint in June.)
em flor	in bloom
em função de	depending upon
em guerra	at war
em nome de	on behalf of, in the name of
em parte	in part
em paz	at peace, alone ("Deixa-me em paz" – "Leave me alone")
em princípio	hopefully
em resposta a	in response to
em segredo	in secret
em seguida	next
em todo caso	in any case
em transe	in a trance
em trânsito	in transit
em vão	in vain
em vez de	instead of
em virtude de	by virtue of, as a result of
fechar-se em copas	to keep one's mouth closed

na minha opinião	in my opinion
na qualidade de	as, in one's capacity as
no máximo	at the most
no melhor dos casos	in the best case, at best
no mínimo	at the least
no pior dos casos	in the worst case, at worst

**Verbs which
combine with *em***

acabar em	to end in
acertar em	to hit a target (also figuratively “to be on the mark”)
acreditar em	to believe in
alistar-se em	to enlist in
andar em (Pt)	to frequent; to be enrolled in a degree program
apostar em	to bet on, to channel one's resources into
armar-se em + adj (Pt)	to pretend to be
aterrar em (Pt)	to land at (as for airplanes)
avaliar em	to appraise
avançar em	to progress in
basear-se em	to base oneself on
bater em	to hit (someone or something)
caminhar em	to walk along
caprichar em	to put special effort into
carregar em	to press (as in to apply pressure)
centrar-se em	to focus on
comparticipar em	to contribute money to
concordar em	to agree upon
confiar em	to trust
consentir em	to authorize, to allow
consistir em	to consist of
converter em	to transform into
crer em	to believe in
dar em	to become
decompor em	to divide into smaller parts
delegar em	to delegate to, deputize to
depositar em	to deposit in
desaguar em	to flow into
desembocar em	to flow into (usually of a river, but also including streets and other figurative meanings)
desfazer-se em	to overdo something

distinguir-se em	to distinguish oneself at (something)
embater em	to crash into
embrenhar-se em	to get lost in
empoleirar-se em	to perch upon
engalfinar-se em	to get into a fight with
(Pt)	
entrar em	to enter
espalhar-se em	to spread on, to spill on/over
esvair-se em	to drain into
exceder-se em	to surpass oneself at
falar em	to speak in (a language); to talk about
formar-se em	to get a degree in
hesitar em	to hesitate in
incorrer em	to commit (e.g. a mistake)
incutir em	to inculcate in
induzir em	to lead into
influir em	to influence
ingressar em	to join (e.g. a club)
insistir em	to insist upon
inspirar-se em	to find inspiration in
interferir em	to interfere in
investir em	to invest in
licenciar-se em	to get a college degree in (a subject)
matricular-se em	to enroll in
meditar em	to meditate on
mexer em	to touch
morder em	to bite on
negociar em	to deal in
pendurar em	to hang something on (something)
pendurar-se em	to hang onto
radicar-se em	to establish residence in, settle in
recair em	to fall back into
refletir em	to reflect upon, to ponder
refletir-se em	to reflect on (as in light)
reparar em	to notice
repercutir-se em	to have repercussions on
reprovar em	to fail at
rivalizar em	to rival in
tardar em	to be late in (doing something)
teimar em	to insist upon
transformar em	to transform into
transigir em	to give in (to a demand, etc.)
votar em	to vote on

3.3.12 *Entre*

Entre corresponds to the English “between” both in space and time and also figuratively.

Examples:

O meu escritório fica entre o do meu chefe e a saída.

My office is between my boss’s and the exit.

Entre as duas e as três António telefonou quatro vezes. (Pt)

Between two and three Antonio called four times.

Estou indeciso entre ir ao cinema e jantar com os meus amigos.

I am undecided between going to the movies and dining with my friends.

Há sempre problemas entre irmãos.

There are always problems between siblings.

3.3.13 *Para* and *por*

Para and *por* are both equivalents for the English “for” but also have many other meanings and uses. The important difference is that *para* generally communicates movement (whether in time, in space, or figuratively) towards a fixed destination, goal or receiver, while *por* does not.

3.3.13.1 Basic uses of *Para*

1. Purpose, aim; “in order to”

Examples:

Estudo para ser médico.

I am studying to become a doctor.

Para aprender português, se deve morar num país lusófono.

In order to learn Portuguese, one should live in a Portuguese-speaking country.

2. Motion towards a specific destination

Example:

Vamos para Recife.

We are going to Recife.

3. Recipient of an action

Example:

Trouxe um presente para você.

I brought a gift for you.

4. Use or suitability

Examples:

Este papel é muito bom para escrever cartas.

This paper is very good for writing letters.

Nos transportes públicos há sempre lugares reservados para mulheres grávidas, crianças, idosos e deficientes.

On public transportation there are always special seats reserved for pregnant women, children, seniors, and the disabled.

5. Deadlines or definite points in time

Example:

Este trabalho de casa é para amanhã.

This homework is for tomorrow.

6. Time

Example:

São dez para as duas.

It's ten to two.

7. Compared with, considering

Examples:

Para professora, ela dá muitos erros.

For a teacher, she makes a lot of mistakes.

Ele é muito alto para um rapaz de cinco anos.

He is very tall for a ten year old.

8. To be about to, to be on the verge of

Example:

Estava para ir embora quando Rogério chegou.

I was about to leave when Rogerio arrived.

3.3.13.2 Expressions with *para*

de lá para cá, de um lado para o outro	back and forth
lá para as tantas [Pt]	very late
para dar e vender [Pt]	many, in abundance
para já	for now
para sempre	forever

3.3.13.3 Basic uses of *Por*

Note: *Por* combines in a contraction with the definite articles to form *pelo, pela, pelos, pelas*:

1. Motivation, reasons

Examples:

Chegamos atrasados por causa do trânsito.
We arrived late because of the traffic.

Eu só vim pela comida.
I only came for the food.

O pai fez muitos sacrifícios pelos filhos.
The father sacrificed a great deal for his children.
2. Emotion or attitudes

Example:

Tenho grande admiração por seu irmão.
I have great admiration for your brother.
3. Approximate time

Example:

Eu janto por volta das oito.
I eat around eight.
4. Through or around a location

Examples:

Caminhei pelo Rossio toda a tarde.
I walked around the Rossio Square [in Lisbon] all afternoon.

Vai-se para França passando por Espanha.
One gets to France by passing through Spain.
5. Duration of an action (it is often omitted or replaced by *durante*, especially in Portugal)

Example:

Estive lá por três anos.
I was there for three years.
6. Before the agent in the passive voice

Example:

***Viagens na Minha Terra* foi escrito por Almeida Garrett.**
“Travels in My Country” was written by Almeida Garrett.
7. Substitution or exchange; “on behalf of”

Example:

Te dou mil reais por esse carro.
I will give you one thousand reais for that car.

8. Rate; “per” (including percentage)

Examples:

Marcos nunca dirige a mais de cem quilômetros por hora.

Marcos never drives faster than one hundred kilometers per hour.

A inflação está a cinco por cento.

The inflation rate is five percent.

9. Frequency of an action

Example:

A minha família janta fora uma vez por semana.

My family dines out once a week.

10. Instead or in place of

Example:

Eu trabalhei pela Márcia porque ela estava doente.

I worked for Marcia because she was sick.

3.3.13.4 Expressions with *por*

acabar por	to end up by (+ gerund)
ansiar por	“can’t wait to”
apaixonar-se, estar apaixonado por alguém	to be passionate about, be mad about somebody
chamar por alguém	to call out for somebody
começar por	to start out by
dar por alguma coisa/alguém	to come to one’s senses
dar-se por	to consider oneself to be
dividir por	to divide by
esforçar-se por	to strive to
esperar por alguém	to wait for someone
estar morto por	to be dying to (do something)
falar por falar	to speak for the sake of speaking
fazer pela vida (Pt)	to make a living
ficar-se por	to limit oneself to
interessar-se por	to become interested in
lutar por	to struggle for, to fight for
multiplicar por	to multiply by
olhar por	to look after
optar por	to opt for
passar por	to be thought to be something or someone you are not, pass yourself off as; to go through something/somebody
pelo menos (= ao menos)	at least

pelos vistos	apparently
perguntar por alguém	to ask for someone
por agora, por enquanto	for now
por certo	certainly
por conseguinte	therefore, so
por escrito	in writing
por fim	finally
por gosto	for the fun of it
por inteiro	totally
por isso	for that reason
por mim/ti . . .	as far as I/you (etc.) am/are concerned; for me/you (etc.)
por outro lado	on the other hand
por pouco	barely
por sorte	luckily
por último	finally, lastly
por um lado . . . por outro	on the one hand . . . on the other . . .
por/pelo amor de Deus	for the love of God
primar por	to distinguish for
recear por alguém	to be afraid for somebody
reger-se por	to follow (as in rules)
regozijar-se por	to be happy for
ser por	to be in favor of
suspirar por	to long for
tomar alguém por	to mistake someone for

3.3.14 *Sem*

Sem is used to express the English “without.”

Examples:

Não saias de casa sem o guarda-chuva. (Pt)

Don't leave home without your umbrella.

O cliente foi-se embora sem pagar.

The customer left without paying.

3.3.15 *Sob*

Sob is used to express “under” in formal or literary discourse. In spoken discourse it is generally used figuratively. It is also used in the historical context to express “in the reign of.”

Examples:

Sob o céu estrelado a cidade dormia em paz.

Under the starry sky, the city slept in peace.

Estou sob muita pressão por causa dos prazos a cumprir.
I am under a lot of pressure because of upcoming deadlines.

Sob Dom Manuel, desenvolveu-se o estilo manuelino.
The Manueline [architectural] style was developed under King Manuel.

3.3.16 *Sobre*

Sobre is used to express “on top of” and is used figuratively to mean “about.”

Examples:

Ela pôs os talheres de prata sobre a mesa para os limpar.
She placed the silver utensils on the table in order to clean them.

O convidado vai falar sobre as suas experiências médicas.
The guest speaker will talk about his medical experiments.

3.4 Prefixes and suffixes

3.4.1 Diminutives

Diminutive suffixes are used to denote smallness or to express affection regarding an object, animal, or person, while augmentatives indicate largeness. Both may be used literally or in a figurative sense.

Diminutives are formed as follows. Note that final plural *-s* or *-es* is always removed before adding the suffix and the suffix is then pluralized:

- For words ending in *-s* or *-z*, add the suffix *-inho* or *-inha*.
rapaz > rapazinho
 boy > little boy
voz > vozinha
 voice > little voice
adeus > adeusinho
 goodbye > bye bye (in this case the diminutive indicates informality or affection)
- For words ending in unstressed *-o* or *-a*, remove the final vowel before adding *-inho*/*-inha*.
bolo > bolinho
 cake > little cake, cupcake
casas > casinhas
 houses > little houses

porco > **porquinho**

pig > little pig, piglet

gato > **gatinho**

cat > kitty, kitten

3. If the words end in an unstressed *-e*, *-i*, or *-u*, add *-zinho*.

idades > **idadezinhas**

cities > villages

ave > **avezinha**

bird > birdie or little bird

4. If the word ends in a stressed vowel, diphthong, or any consonant other than *-s* or *-z*, then add *-zinho*.

peru > **peruzinho**

turkey > small turkey

limão > **limãozinho**

lemon > small lemon

hotel > **hotelzinho**

hotel > little hotel

hotéis > **hoteizinhos**

hotels > little hotels

5. For words ending in *-m*, change to *-n* before the suffix.

trem > **trenzinho**

train > little train

There are other suffixes used with certain words which express a specialized meaning but do not express affection.

These other suffixes include:

-acho

rio > **riacho**

river > creek

-icha

barba > **barbicha**

beard > little beard

-isco

chuva > **chuvisco**

rain > light rain

-ilho

pecado > **pecadilho**

sin > little sin

-ela

rua > **ruela**

street > alley

3.4.2 Augmentatives

Augmentative suffixes show either a large size or quantity, both literally and figuratively.

They may also have a negative connotation.

The most common suffixes are *-ão* for masculine and *-ona* for feminine words.

Words ending in a diphthong or a nasal take the suffix *-zão* or *-zona*.

carro > **carrão**

car > big car, or to show admiration

dinheiro > **dinheirão**

money > a lot of money

mulher > **mulherona**

woman > big woman (this has a negative connotation)

solteira > **solteirona**

single woman > spinster (this has a negative connotation)

Some words have specialized meanings and change gender when combining with the augmentative suffix:

a roupa > **o roupão**

clothes > a robe

um comilão

a glutton

um vidro > **um vidrão**

glass > a glass recycling receptacle

uma garrafa > **um garrafão**

bottle > five-liter jug

uma palavra > **um palavrão**

word > swear word

uma porta > **um portão**

door > gate

Other augmentative endings include:

-anzil

corpo > **corpanzil**

body > big body

-aréu

fogo > **fogaréu**

fire > big fire

-orra

cabeça > **cabeçorra**

head > big head

3.4.3 Professions, stores, and services

The names of many professions are formed by a suffix added to the product or task performed:

1. *-eiro*

The ending *-eiro* is used for males and *-eira* for females while *-eiro* is also the neutral form.

banqueiro	banker
cabeleireiro	hairdresser
calceteiro	street paver
carpinteiro	carpenter
carteiro	mail carrier, postman
correeiro	leather worker
coveiro	gravedigger
cutileiro	knifemaker, cutler
engenheiro	engineer
fanqueiro	draper
ferreiro	blacksmith
garimpeiro	gold miner
livreiro	bookseller
pedreiro	stone mason
sapateiro	shoemaker or shoe repairman
toureiro	bullfighter

2. *-or*

The form *-or* is used for males and *-ora* is used for females. The suffix *-or* is also the neutral form.

agricultor	farmer
cantor	singer
escritor	writer
escultor	sculptor
espectador	spectator
estivador	stower, docker, stevedore
historiador	historian
jogador	player
pintor	painter
prestidigitador	magician
silvicultor	forester
vendedor	seller, vendor

3. *-grafo*

The form *-grafo* is used for males and *-grafa* is used for females. The suffix *-grafo* is also the neutral form:

fotógrafo, coreógrafo, cineógrafo, etc.

4. *-ista*

The suffix *-ista* is used for both males and females and corresponds to the English *-ist*, especially in medical specialties:
jornalista, **cardiologista**, **ecologista**, etc.

Different from English are:
contista (short story writer)
romancista (novelist)
contabilista (accountant)

5. *-aria*

The names of stores in Portuguese are generally formed by adding the suffix *-aria* to the name of the product sold:

barba > **barbearia**

beard > barber shop

cerveja > **cervejaria**

beer > bar

droga > **drogaria**

drug > drug store (an old-fashioned corner drug store with toiletries, light hardware, etc.)

gelado > **geladaria**

ice cream > ice cream parlor

leite > **leitaria**

milk > dairy store

livro > **livraria**

book > bookstore

pão > **padaria**

bread > bakery

pastel > **pastelaria**

cake > bakery or pastry shop

sapato > **sapataria**

shoe > shoe store

3.5 Forms of address and treatment

3.5.1 Title and forms of address

Portuguese has two forms of address, one informal and one formal.

The informal pronoun “you” (second person) is expressed as *tu* (singular) and *vocês* (plural) in Portugal. In Brazil, while *tu* is used in some regions, the common forms are *você* (singular) and *vocês* (plural).

It is also important to note that *você* and *vocês* are conjugated like the third person while *tu* has its own conjugation (in Portugal, Lusophone Africa and southern Brazil).

The informal forms of address are used to address friends, family members, and children.

Portugal:

Tu nunca fazes o que eu te digo.

You never do what I tell you.

Vocês são brilhantes em tudo o que fazem.

You [pl] are brilliant in everything you do.

Brazil:

Você quer beber um suco?

Do you want to drink some juice?

Espero que você faça boa viagem.

I hope that you have a nice trip.

Onde é que tu vai no Natal (Santa Catarina)?

Where are you going for Christmas?

Note: The *você* form also exists in Portugal but it is more formal.

The formal forms of treatment are varied in both Portugal and Brazil and are usually related to the addressee's title. The masculine forms (with *o*) and the feminine forms (with *a*) are given for each.

Examples:

o senhor (sir/Mister)

a senhora (Madam/ma'am/Mrs.)

o senhor doutor, a senhora doutora (Doctor or anyone with a college degree)

o senhor engenheiro, a senhora engenheira (for those with a degree in engineering)

o senhor arquiteto, a senhora arquiteta (architect)

o senhor professor, a senhora professora (teacher or professor)

o senhor doutor juiz, a senhora doutora juíza (judge)

o senhor diretor, a senhora diretora

(supervisor/manager/director)

o senhor presidente, a senhora presidente (president or CEO)

A senhora podia fazer o favor de abrir a janela?

Could you open the window [to a woman]?

Os senhores professores não querem vir jantar conosco?

Would you [to several professors] like to come dine with us?

O senhor doutor pode ver a minha filha amanhã?

Doctor, could you see my daughter tomorrow?

3.5.2 Abbreviated titles

In written discourse, titles are generally abbreviated.

Sr. (senhor)	Sir, Mr.
Sra. (senhora)	Madam, Mrs., Miss, Ms.
Dra. (doutora)	Doctor (female)
Dr. (doutor)	Doctor (male)
D. (dona)	Mrs., Miss, Ms.
Ex.mo (excelentíssimo)	This form is used as a general salutation in formal letters and precedes the name or title of the addressee.
Ex.ma (excelentíssima)	Your excellency (female). See above.
Ilmo. (ilustríssimo)	You (very formal). This form is used as a salutation. In the case of a female addressee, “Ilma.” is used.
V.Ex.cia (Vossa Excelência)	You (formal) within the body of the letter.
MI. (meritíssimo)	You (very formal). This would also be used as a salutation.
Prof. Doutor (Professor Doutor)	For a male with a Ph.D.
Prof.^a Doutora (Professora Doutora)	For a female with a Ph.D.

Two other forms of address which correspond to “Dear” are used in letters in the greeting and are not abbreviated:

Querido/Querida (more informal)
Caro/Cara (less formal)
Prezado/Prezada (more formal)

3.5.3 Closing expressions for letters

For informal letters, the following closings are used:

Teu amigo/ Tua amiga
 Your friend

The following correspond to the English closure “Love,”:

Beijos, Beijinhos

Kisses (for a member of the opposite sex, female friends, or for family members)

Abraços, Um abraço,
 Hugs, A hug (for friends)

For formal letters, the following correspond to the English “Sincerely,” “Faithfully,” or “Yours truly,”:

Com os meus cumprimentos,

With my compliments,

Com os meus melhores cumprimentos,

With my best compliments,

Atenciosamente,

Attentively,

3.5.4 Telephone communication

The following greetings correspond to the English “Hello” when answering the telephone:

Portugal:

— **Estou sim?** — **Está?**

Brazil:

— **Alô?**

Note: in Mozambique and Guinea Bissau, “Alô?” is also used.

In Portuguese, the request to speak with a party is more formal than in American English. Thus one would not say: “Is Marcos there?”, but instead:

Daqui fala Luís Valente. Podia falar com Marcos?

This is Luís Valente. Could I speak with Marcos?

Telephone conversations are closed with the following expressions:

Até logo (Until later)

Adeus/Tchau (Good-bye)

Boa-noite, Boa-tarde, Bom-dia (Good night, Good afternoon, Good day)

Com licença (With your permission)

The following is a model of a typical formal telephone conversation.

O Sr. Gomes: *atende o telefone* **Estou?**

A Sra. Castro: **Estou sim, bom-dia. Daqui fala Luísa Castro. Podia falar com o Sr. Dire(c)tor?**

O Sr. Gomes: **Não está neste momento. Deseja deixar recado?**

A Sra. Castro: **Não, obrigada. Ligarei mais tarde.**

O Sr. Gomes: **Com certeza. Bom-dia.**

A Sra. Castro: **Bom-dia. Com licença.**

Mr. Gomes: *answers the telephone* **Hello?**

Mrs. Castro: **Hello. This is Luisa Castro. May I speak with the Director?**

- Mr. Gomes: He is not here at the moment. May I take a message?
 Mrs. Castro: No, thank you. I'll call back later.
 Mr. Gomes: OK. Good-bye.
 Mrs. Castro: Good-bye.

Note. The following expressions are customary in telephone conversations:

É engano.	You have the wrong number.
É o próprio. É a própria.	Speaking.
Está ocupado.	The line is busy.
Podia ligar-me a _____?	Could you connect me with/ to _____?

3.6 Idiomatic expressions

3.6.1 Proverbs

English equivalents are given when applicable. If there is no English proverb equivalent, then an approximate translation and explanation are given.

A cavalo dado não se olha o dente. (Pt)	Don't look a gift horse in the mouth.
A esperança é a última que morre! (Br); A esperança é a última a morrer. (Pt)	Hope dies last.
Enquanto há vida, há esperança.	While there is life, there is hope.
A galinha da vizinha é sempre melhor do que a minha.	The grass is always greener on the other side of the fence (lit. "The neighbor's chicken is always better than mine").
Água mole em pedra dura, tanto bate até que fura.	Soft water on hard rock eventually breaks it, i.e. insistence will wear one down.
Antes tarde do que nunca. (Br); Mais vale tarde do que nunca. (Pt)	Better late than never.
Bem prega Frei Tomás: fazei o que ele diz, não o que ele faz. (Pt)	Don't do as I do, do as I say (lit. "Father Thomas preaches well, do as he says, not as he does").
Faz o que eu digo, não o que eu faço. (Br)	
Cada um dá o que tem, a mais não é obrigado.	Every person gives what he/she has and is not obligated to do anything else, i.e. one should give in proportion to what one has.

Cada cabeça, sua sentença.	To each his own (lit. “Every head, its own sentence”).
Cada um por si, Deus por todos. (Pt)	Every man for himself and Devil take the hindmost (lit. “God for all”).
Cachorro que ladra não morde. (Br); Cão que ladra não morde. (Pt)	Barking dogs don’t bite.
De Espanha, nem bom vento, nem bom casamento. (Pt)	From Spain neither good winds nor good marriages, i.e. nothing good comes from Spain.
De grão em grão, a galinha enche o papo. (Br)	If you look after the pennies the pounds will look after themselves (lit. “Grain by grain, the hen fills her stomach”).
Grão a grão, enche a galinha o papo. (Pt)	
De pequenino se torce o pepino.	From the time they are little, cucumbers are twisted, i.e. good habits must be instilled at a young age.
Deus ajuda quem cedo madruga. (Br)	God helps those who wake up early.
Deus escreve direito por linhas tortas. or Há males que vêm por bem. (Pt); Há males que vêm para bem. (Br)	Every cloud has a silver lining (lit. “God writes straight with crooked lines,” i.e. there are bad things that occur for a good reason; everything happens for a reason).
Devagar se vai ao longe.	If you walk slowly, you’ll walk far, i.e. if you persevere you’ll eventually attain your goals.
Diz-me com quem andas, e te direi quem és. (Pt)	Birds of a feather flock together (lit. “Tell me whom you go with, and I will tell you who you are”).
Dos fracos não reza a história. (Pt)	History does not report the actions of the defeated.
Em Abril, águas mil. (Pt)	In April, a thousand rains.
Em casa de ferreiro, espeto de pau. (Pt); Em casa de ferreiro, o espeto é de pau. (Br)	In the blacksmith’s house, stick of wood, i.e. you don’t do at home what you do at work.
Em Roma, sê como os romanos. (Pt)	When in Rome, do as the Romans do.
Em terra de cegos, quem tem olho é rei. (Pt); Em terra de cego, quem tem um olho é rei. (Br)	In the kingdom (lit. “land”) of the blind the one-eyed man is king.
Entre marido e mulher não metas a colher. (Pt)	Between husband and wife, don’t place a spoon, i.e. don’t interfere in a couple’s affairs.
Entre marido e mulher não se mete a colher. (Br)	

Gaivotas em terra, tempestade no mar. (Pt)	Seagulls on land show storms at sea.
Gato escaldado da água fria tem medo. (Pt); Gato escaldado tem medo de água fria. (Br)	Once bitten, twice shy (lit. “Cat once scalded is afraid of cold water”).
Homem prevenido vale por dois.	A trained man (soldier) is worth two.
Ladrão que rouba a ladrão tem cem anos de perdão. (Pt); Ladrão que rouba de ladrão, tem cem anos de perdão. (Br)	The thief who steals from a thief receives 100 years of pardon, i.e. it is not wrong to steal from a thief.
Longe dos olhos, longe do coração.	Out of sight, out of mind (lit. “Far from the eyes, far from the heart”).
Mais vale só que mal acompanhado.	Better alone than in bad company.
Mais vale um pássaro na mão do que dois a voar.	A bird in the hand is worth two in the bush (lit. “flying”).
Março, marçagão, de manhã Inverno, de tarde Verão. (Pt)	In March, the mornings are like winter and the afternoons like summer.
Não há domingo sem missa, nem segunda sem preguiça. (Pt)	There are no Sundays without mass, nor Mondays without laziness.
Não há mulher sem graça, nem poeta sem cachaça. (Br)	There is no woman without grace and no poet without sugar cane liquor.
Não se pode tocar os sinos e andar na procissão. (Pt)	You can’t ring the bells and walk in the procession, i.e. you can’t do two things at once.
Nem tudo o que brilha é ouro.	All that glitters is not gold.
Nunca deixe para amanhã o que você pode fazer hoje. (Br); Não deixes para amanhã o que podes fazer hoje. (Pt)	Never put off until tomorrow what you can do today.
O pior surdo é aquele que não quer ouvir. (Pt); O pior cego é o que não quer ver. (Br)	None so deaf as those who won’t hear (lit. “None so blind as those who won’t see”).
O segredo é a alma do negócio.	Silence is golden (lit. “Secrecy is the soul of business”).
Para bom entendedor, meia palavra basta.	For the good listener, half a word is enough.
Quanto mais alto se vai, de mais alto se cai. (Pt)	The taller they are, the harder they fall (lit. “The higher you go, the further you fall”).

Quanto mais se tem, mais se quer.	The more you have, the more you want.
Quem cala, consente.	Silence gives consent.
Quem canta, seus males espanta. (Pt)	He who sings scares away his troubles.
Quem cedo madruga, dorme à tarde. (Br)	He who gets up early has to take a nap in the afternoon.
Quem despreza, quer comprar. (Pt)	He who criticizes, covets.
Quem ama o feio, bonito lhe parece. (Br); Quem feio ama, bonito lhe parece. (Pt)	Beauty is in the eye of the beholder (lit. “She who loves an ugly person, he seems handsome to her”).
Quem não arrisca, não petisca. (Pt)	Nothing ventured, nothing gained.
Quem não deve, não teme.	He who has done nothing wrong should not fear to be probed.
Quem não tem cão, caça com gato.	He who doesn’t have a dog, hunts with a cat, i.e. one must make the best of what’s available.
Quem nunca comeu melado, quando come se labuza. (Br)	He who has never tried molasses, when he does try it gets it all over himself, i.e. can’t have enough of it.
Quem se mete por atalhos, não se livra de trabalhos. (Pt)	If you take a short cut, you do not escape trouble, i.e. the shortest way is not always the easiest.
Quem ri por último, ri melhor.	He who laughs last, laughs best.
Quem semeia ventos, colhe tempestades. (Pt)	As you sow, so shall you reap.
Quem tem boca, vai dar a Roma.	If you have a mouth, you will get to Rome, i.e. if you can ask questions, you can find your way.
Quem tem telhados de vidro não atira pedras ao vizinho.	People who live in glass houses shouldn’t throw stones.
Quem vê cara, não vê coração. (Br); Quem vê caras, não vê corações. (Pt)	You can’t judge a book by its cover (lit. “He who sees faces cannot see hearts”).
Roma e Pavia não se fizeram num (só) dia. (Pt)	Rome wasn’t built in a day.
Se não queres ser lobo, não lhe vistas a pele. (Pt)	If you don’t want to be a wolf, don’t dress as one, i.e. don’t act as one.
Tal pai, tal filho.	Like father, like son.

Todos os caminhos vão dar a Roma.	All roads lead to Rome.
Tudo o que arde, cura, e o que aperta, segura. (Br)	Everything that burns, heals, and everything that tightens, secures.
Voz de burro não chega ao céu. (Br); Vozes de burro não chegam ao céu. (Pt)	The voice of a donkey does not reach heaven, i.e. common people's voices do not reach heaven's ears.

3.6.2 Metaphors

[um] Abacaxi. (Br)	A big or thorny problem.
Amigo de Peniche. (Pt)	A friend of Peniche, i.e. a false or non-dependable friend who doesn't come through when you need him/her. (Peniche is a town on the peninsula of Cabo Carvoeiro, known for its beaches and as a summer resort.)
[ser uma] Amostra de gente. (Pt)	A sample of people, i.e. (to be) small.
[ser um] Bom garfo.	A good fork, i.e. (to be) a gourmet.
[ser um] Bota de elástico. (Pt)	A rubber boot, i.e. (to be) square or old-fashioned.
[ser um(a)] Cabeça de alho chocho. (Pt)	A head of stale garlic, i.e. (to be) scatterbrained or forgetful.
Cada macaco no seu galho.	Each monkey on its own branch, i.e. every person in his own place.
Estar de saco cheio. (Br)	(To be) fed up with something, (to have) no more patience with something/somebody.
Em cascos de rolha (Pt); Onde o diabo perdeu as botas. (Br)	Where there are pieces of cork / Where the devil lost his boots, i.e. very far away.
Entre a espada e a parede.	Between a sword and a wall, i.e. between a rock and a hard place.
Falar pelos cotovelos. (Br); [ser um(a)] Fala-barato. (Pt)	(To be) a chatterbox.
Favas contadas. (Pt)	Counted beans, i.e. in the bag.
[uma] História do arco da velha.	A tall tale.
[um(a)] Pãozinho sem sal. (Pt)	(To be) bread without salt, i.e. dull.

[um(a)] Pau de virar tripas. (Pt)	A stick to stir tripe with, i.e. very skinny.
[um(a)] Pau mandado. (Pt)	A piece of wood, i.e. lifeless or devoid of will.
[um(a)] Rato de biblioteca.	A library mouse, i.e. a bookworm.
[um(a)] Santo de pau carunchoso. (Pt)	A saint made of rotten wood, i.e. a fake saint.
[um(a)] Unha de fome.	A nail of hunger, i.e. stingy.
[um] Zero à esquerda.	A zero to the left of the first digit of a given number, i.e. really useless or bad at something.

3.6.3 Verbal expressions

Andar com o credo na boca. (Pt)	To go with the creed in one's mouth, i.e. to be anxious and therefore always praying for a positive outcome.
Apanhar alguém com a boca na botija/em flagrante delito. (Pt)	To catch someone with their mouth on the bed warmer/in flagrante delicto, i.e. to catch someone in the act.
Arrastar a asa (a uma mulher). (Pt)	To drag a woman's wing, i.e. to seduce a woman.
Chegar a vias de facto. (Pt)	To argue with someone so heatedly that you get physical.
Dar zebra. (Br)	To go wrong or fall through.
Estar nas suas sete quintas. (Pt)	To be on one's seven farms, i.e. to be in seventh heaven.
Estar careca de saber [alguma coisa]. (Br)	To know something all too well.
Eu sou mais eu. (Br)	I alone but I (i.e. I believe in myself, I have great confidence).
Fazer jogo de cintura. (Br)	To make a yoke of one's belt, i.e. attempt to solve a delicate problem with great diplomacy and skill, at times by going around the obstacle.
Fazer o ninho atrás da orelha a alguém. (Pt)	To make the nest behind someone's ear, i.e. to try to seduce someone.
Lançar o barro à parede.	To throw the clay at the wall, i.e. to test the waters.
Lavar a égua. (Br)	To wash the mare, i.e. to eat a lot or enjoy greatly.

Não levar desaforo para casa. (Br)	Not to take any offense home, i.e. to settle matters when they arise.
Não ser ouvido nem achado. (Pt)	To not be heard or found, i.e. to not be consulted.
[É] Pegar ou largar.	Take it or leave it.
Passar pelas brasas. (Pt) / Cochilar. (Br)	To walk over coals (Pt), i.e. to doze off or to take a brief nap; to doze. (Br)
Pregar aos peixes. (Pt)	To preach to the fish, i.e. say something that falls on deaf ears.
Procurar agulha em palheiro.	To look for a needle in a haystack.
Puxar a brasa à sua sardinha.	To blow the heat on the coals under your sardines, i.e. to look out for your own interests.
Quando as galinhas tiverem dentes. (Pt)	When chickens grow teeth, i.e. never.
Sair o tiro pela culatra a alguém. (Pt)	To make something backfire on someone.
Se correr o bicho pega, se ficar o bicho come. (Br); Preso por ter cão, preso por não ter. (Pt)	If you run the animal will get you, if you stay still, it will eat you. (Br); caught for having a dog, caught for not (having one), i.e. damned if you do, damned if you don't.
Soltar a franga. (Br)	To let the hen go free, i.e. to let go of one's inhibitions, revealing a gaudy, exaggerated self.
Vai ver se estou na esquina. / Vai catar coquinho. (Br) / Vai pentear macaco.	Go see if I am over there, i.e. leave me alone.

3.6.4 Similes

Similes are usually preceded by the verb *ser*, although they can also occur with a different verb.

Cheio que nem um ovo.	Full as an egg.
Chorar que nem uma Madalena	To cry like Mary Magdalene.
Claro como água.	Clear as water.
Correr que nem uma lebre. (Pt)	To run as fast as a hare.
Feio que nem um trovão. (Pt)	Uglier than thunder.

Fumar que nem uma chaminé.	To smoke like a chimney.
Gordo como uma pipa. (Pt)	Fat as a barrel.
Lento que nem uma tartaruga/um caracol.	Slow as a turtle/a snail.
Mau como as cobras. (Pt)	Evil as snakes.
Sorrateiro que nem uma raposa. (Pt)	Cunning as a fox.
Surdo que nem uma porta.	Deaf as a doorknob (lit. door).
Teimoso que nem um burro.	Stubborn as a mule.

3.7 Adjectives

3.7.1 Adjectives pertaining to countries and towns

Portuguese, like all Romance languages, has special adjectives for inhabitants and products from different countries and towns.

It is important to note that national and regional adjectives are not capitalized in Portuguese.

3.7.1.1 Portugal (no article) -português

Regions

Origin	Adjective
Algarve (m)	algarvio
Alentejo (m)	alentejano
Estremadura (f)	estremenho
Minho (m)	minhoto
Beira Interior, Beira Litoral (f)	beirão, beirense
Trás-os-Montes (m, pl)	transmontano
Norte (m)	nortenho
Açores (m, pl)	açoriano
Madeira (f)	madeirense
Douro (m)	duriense

Cities

Lisboa	lisboeta, alfacinha
Porto	portuense, portista
Braga	bracarense
Coimbra	coimbrão
Évora	eborense
Viana do Castelo	vianense

Arcos de Valdevez	arcuense
Famalicão	famalicense
Vila do Conde	vilacondense
Penafiel	penafidense
Vila Real	vila-realense
Lamego	lamecense
Viseu	visiense
Estremoz	estremocense
Portimão	portimonense
Loulé	louletano
Olhão	olhanense
Ponta Delgada	micaelense

3.7.1.2 Brasil-brasileiro

Regions

Nordeste	nordestino
Rio Grande do Sul	gaúcho
São Paulo	paulista
Minas Gerais	mineiro
Mato Grosso	matogrossense
Pernambuco	pernambucano
Paraíba	paraibenense
Bahia (f)	bahiano
Ceará	cearense
Goiás	goianense
Maranhão	maranhaense
Rio de Janeiro (m)	fluminense

Cities

Rio de Janeiro	carioca
São Paulo	paulistano
Porto Alegre	porto-alegrense
Curitiba	curitibano
Paraíba	paraíbano

3.7.1.3 Lusophone Africa

Angola	angolano
Moçambique	moçambicano
Cabo Verde	cabo-verdiano
São Tomé e Príncipe	são-tomense
Guiné Bissau (f)	guineense

3.7.1.4 Other nationalities

All regular feminine forms of the adjectives are formed by adding *-a* or changing the final *-o* to *-a*. All irregular feminine forms are given.

Afganistão (m)	afegão, afegã
África do Sul (f)	sul-africano
Albânia (f)	albanês, albanesa
Alemanha (f)	alemão, alemã (the plural is <i>alemães</i> , <i>alemãs</i>)
Arábia Saudita (f)	saudita or árabe (same form for both m and f)
Argélia (f)	argelino
Argentina (f)	argentino
Áustria (f)	austriaco
Bélgica (f)	belga (for both m and f)
Birmânia (f)	birmanês, birmanesa
Bolívia (f)	boliviano
Bósnia (f)	bósnio
Bulgária (f)	búlgaro
Camboja (m)	cambojano
Canadá (m)	canadiano (Pt), canadense (Br) (the f is also <i>canadense</i>)
Chile (m)	chileno
China (f)	chinês, chinesa
Chipre (m)	cipriota (for both m and f)
Colômbia (f)	colombiano
Coreia do Norte (f)	norte-coreano
Coreia do Sul (f)	sul-coreano
Costa Rica (f)	costa-riquenho
Croácia (f)	croata (for both m and f)
Cuba (f; no article)	cubano
Dinamarca (f)	dinamarquês, dinamarquesa
Egip(t)o (m)	egípcio
Equador (m)	equatoriano
Escócia (f)	escocês, escocesa
Eslováquia (f)	eslovaco
Eslovênia (f)	esloveno
Espanha (f)	espanhol
Andaluzia (f)	andaluz
Catalúnia (f)	catalão, catalã
Estremadura (f)	estremenho
Galiza (f)	galego
País Basco (m)	basco
Estados Unidos (m. pl)	norte-americano
Nova Iorque	novo-iorquino

Etiópia (f)	etíope (for both m and f)
Filipinas (f, pl)	filipino
Finlândia (f)	finlandês, finlandesa
França (f; no article in Pt)	francês, francesa
Paris	parisiense (the f; is also <i>parisiense</i>)
País de Gales (m)	galês, galesa
Geórgia (f)	georgiano
Grã-Bretanha (f)	britânico
Londres	londrino
Grécia (f)	grego
Guatemala (f)	guatemalteco
Holanda (f)	holandês, holandesa
Honduras (f, pl)	hondurenho
Hungria (f)	húngaro
Índia (f)	indiano
Indonésia (f)	indonésio
Inglaterra (f)	inglês, inglesa
Irão/Irã (Br) (m)	iraniano
Iraque (m)	iraquiano
Irlanda (f)	irlandês, irlandesa
Islândia (f)	islandês, islandesa
Israel (no article)	israelita (for both m and f) (Pt); israelense (Br)
Itália (f)	italiano
Japão (m)	japonês, japonesa
Jugoslávia (f)	jugoslavo
Líbano (m)	libanês, libanesa
Libéria (f)	liberiano
Líbia (f)	líbio/libanês, libanesa
Luxemburgo (m)	luxemburguês, luxemburguesa
Malásia (f)	malaio
Malta (no article)	maltês, maltesa
Marrocos (no article)	marroquino
Mauritânia (f)	mauritânio
México (m)	mexicano
Micronésia (f)	micronésio
Namíbia (f)	namíbio
Nepal (m)	nepalês, nepalesa
Nicaragua (f)	nicaraguense (the f is also nicaraguense)
Nigéria (f)	nigeriano
Noruega (f)	norueguês, norueguesa
Nova Caledónia (f)	novo-caledonês, nova-caledonesa
Nova Zelândia (f)	novo-zelandês, nova-zelandesa (Br)/neo-zelandês (Pt)
Panamá (m)	panamenho
Paquistão (m)	paquistanês, paquistanesa

Paraguai (m)	paraguaio
Peru (m)	peruano
Polónia (Pt)/Polónia (Br) (f)	polaco (Pt)/polonês, polonesa (Br)
Porto Rico (no article)	porto-riquenho
Quênia (m)	queniano
República Checa (f)	checo
Roménia (Pt)/ Romênia (Br) (f)	romeno
Rússia (f)	russo
Moscovo	moscovita
Salvador (m)	salvadorenho
Senegal (m)	senegalês, senegalesa
Serra Leone (f)	serra-leonês, serra-leonesa
Síria (f)	sírio
Somália (f)	somalês, somalesa
Sudão (m)	sudanês, sudanesa
Suécia (f)	sueco
Suíça (f)	suíço
Suriname (m)	surinamês, surinamesa
Tailândia (f)	tailandês, tailandesa
Tibete (m)	tibetano
Timor-Leste (m in Br, no article in Pt)	timorense (for both m and f)
Tunísia (f)	tunísio
Turquia (f)	turco
Uruguai (m)	uruguaio
Venezuela (f)	venezuelano
Vietname (Pt), Vietnã (Br) (m)	vietnamita (for both m and f).
Zaire (m)	zairiano/zairense
Zâmbia (f)	zambiano

3.7.1.5 Other descriptive adjectives: continents and geographic regions

América	americano
América do Norte	norte-americano
América do Sul	sul-americano
África	africano
Austrália	australiano
Ásia	asiático
América Latina	latino-americano
Europa	européu, europeia (Pt)/européia (Br)

Oceans and seas

Oceano	Atlântico	Atlantic Ocean
	Índico	Indian Ocean
	Pacífico	Pacific Ocean
Mar	Mediterrânico	Mediterranean
	Morto	Dead Sea
	Vermelho	Red Sea
	Cáspio	Caspian Sea
	Salgado	Salten Sea

3.8 Proper names

Portuguese usually translates foreign proper nouns when possible. There is a larger variety of proper names left in the original language in Brazil than in Portugal, as the latter is more strict in the use of only historically Portuguese names and traditional spelling.

3.8.1 The Ancient Greek world

Afrodite e Eros	Aphrodite and Eros
Alexandre	Alexander
Aquiles	Achilles
Ariana	Ariadne
Aristófanés	Aristophanes
Aristóteles	Aristotle
Arquimedes	Archimedes
Artemísia	Artemis
Atena	Athena
Deméter	Demeter
Dionísio	Dionysus
Édipo	Oedipus
Esopo	Aesop
Ésquilo	Aeschylus
Euclides	Euclid
Eurídice	Eurydice
Eurípides	Euripides
Febo	Phoebus
Hermes	Hermes

Homero	Homer
Leandro	Leander
Orfeu	Orpheus
Pitágoras	Pythagoras
Platão	Plato
Ulisses e Penélope	Ulysses and Penelope
Urano	Uranus
Xenofonte	Xenophon

3.8.2 The Ancient Roman world

Adriano	Hadrian
Aníbal	Hannibal
Apolo	Apollo
Augusto	Augustus
Baco	Bacchus
Boécio	Boethius
Cartago	Carthage
Catão	Cato
Cícero	Cicero
Cipião	Scipio
Cleópatra	Cleopatra
Cupido	Cupid
Gaio e Tibério Graco, os (irmãos) Gracos	Gaius and Tiberius Gracchus, the Gracchi
Hércules	Hercules
Horácio	Horace
Júlio César	Julius Caesar
Júpiter	Jupiter
Marco António	Mark Antony
Marte	Mars
Mercúrio	Mercury
Minerva	Minerva
Nero	Nero
Ovídio	Ovid
Plínio	Pliny
Plutão	Pluto
Saturno	Saturn
Tito Lívio	Livy or Titus Livius
Vénus	Venus
Vulcano	Vulcan

3.8.3 The Bible

Abel	Abel
Adão	Adam
André	Andrew
Belém	Bethlehem
Bíblia	Bible
Caín	Cain
Deus	God
Eva	Eve
Herodes	Herod
Isaías	Isaiah
Jeová	Jehova
Jerusalém	Jerusalem
Jesus Cristo	Jesus Christ
João Baptista	John the Baptist
Jonas	Jonah
José	Joseph
Josué	Joshua
Lucas	Luke
Madalena	Mary Magdalene
Moisés	Moses
Nazaré	Nazareth
Noé	Noah
o Messias	the Messiah
Pôncio Pilatos	Pontius Pilate
Raquel	Rachel
Rute	Ruth
Saba	Sheba
Satanás	Satan
Saúl	Saul
Sião	Zion

3.8.4 The medieval and Renaissance world

A Reconquista	The Reconquest
caravelas	caravels
Cristóvão Colombo	Christopher Columbus
as Descobertas/os Descobrimentos	the Discoveries
estilo Manuelino	Manueline style
Henrique, o Navegador	Henry the Navigator
Luís de Camões	Luis Camoens
Lutero	Luther

Magalhães	Magellan
Maquiavel	Machiavelli
Miguel Ângelo	Michelangelo
Moamed	Mohammed
Petrarca	Petrarch
São Tomás de Aquino	Saint Thomas Aquinas

3.8.5 Contemporary personal names

Afonso	Alphonse
Alberto	Albert
Alexandra	Alexandra
Alexandre	Alexander
Ana	Anna, Anne
André	Andrew
Andreia	Andrea
Ângelo	Angel
Antônio (Br)/ António (Pt)	Anthony
Catarina	Catherine, Kathleen
Chico	Francis
Conceição	Conception
Cristina	Christina
Eduardo	Edward
Estêvão	Steven/Stephen
Fernando	Ferdinand
Francisca	Frances
Francisco	Francis, Frank
Frederico	Frederick
Haroldo	Harold
Helena	Helena, Helen, Ellen
Henrique	Henry
Inês	Agnes
Isabel	Elizabeth
Jaime	James
João	John
Jorge	George
José	Joseph
Júlia	Julia
Julião, Júlio	Julian
Leonor	Eleanor
Lúcia	Lucy
Luís	Luis

Luísa	Louise
Marco	Mark
Margarida	Margaret
Maria	Mary
Mariana	Mary Ann
Marta	Martha
Miguel	Michael
Patrícia	Patricia
Patrício	Patrick
Paulo	Paul
Pedro	Peter
Rafael	Raphael
Ricardo	Richard
Ronaldo	Ronald
Sara	Sarah
Sofia	Sophie
Susana	Susan
Teresa	Theresa
Timóteo	Timothy
Tomás	Thomas
Vítor	Victor

3.8.6 Names of persons without close English equivalents. Please note that there are many more, in particular in Brazil and Lusophone Africa.

Ascensão
Bela (f)
Branca
Céu
Clotilde
Filomena
Leonilde
Marisa
Rafaela
Rodrigo
Rui
Sílvia
Silvina
Tiago

3.8.7 Cities, islands, states and counties

3.8.7.1 Europe

Amsterdão (Pt) / Amsterdã (Br)	Amsterdam
Antióquia	Antioch
Antuérpia	Antwerp
Atenas	Athens
Avinhon	Avignon
Baviera	Bavaria
Belgrado	Belgrade
Berlim	Berlin
Berna	Bern
Bona	Bonn
Bordéus	Bordeaux
Borgonha	Burgundy
Bruxelas	Brussels
Colónia	Cologne
Copenhaga	Copenhagen
Cornualha	Cornwall
Córsega	Corsica
Cracóvia	Krakov
Edinburgo	Edinburgh
Estocolmo	Stockholm
Estrasburgo	Strasbourg
Flandres	Flanders
Florença	Florence
Friburgo	Freiburg
Gante	Ghent
Gasconha	Gascony
Genebra	Geneva
Génova	Genoa
Hamburgo	Hamburg
Haya	The Hague
Ilhas Baleares	Balearic Islands
Londres	London
Lovaina	Louvain
A Madeira	The Madeira archipelago
Mântua	Mantua-Mantova
Marselha	Marseilles
Milão	Milan
Moscovo (Pt) / Moscou (Br)	Moscow
Munique	Munich
Nápoles	Naples

Os Açores	The Azores (archipelago)
Pádua	Padua
Praga	Prague
Provença	Provence
Reikiavíc	Reykjavík
Rodes	Rhodes
Roma	Rome
Roterdão	Rotterdam
Ruão	Rouen
Sabóia	Savoy
São Pítersburgo	Saint Petersburg
São Sebastião	San Sebastian
Sardenha	Sardinia
Saxónia	Saxony
Sevilha	Seville
Sicília	Sicily
Sófia	Sofia
Turim	Turin
Varsóvia	Warsaw
Veneza	Venice
Versalhes	Versailles
Viena	Vienna

3.8.7.2 Africa

Benguela	Bengal
O Cairo	Cairo
A Cidade do Cabo	Cape Town
A Ilha de Santiago	Santiago Island
A Ilha do Sal	Salt Island
Joanesburgo	Johannesburg
Kinchassa	Kinshasa
Tânger	Tangiers
Túnis	Tunis

3.8.7.3 North America

a Flórida	Florida
Filadélfia	Philadelphia
Luisiana	Louisiana
Nova Escócia	Nova Scotia
Nova Jersey	New Jersey
Nova Orleães	New Orleans
Nova York	New York

Novo México	New Mexico
Pensilvânia	Pennsylvania
Santa Bárbara	Santa Barbara
São Francisco	San Francisco

3.8.7.4 Asia

Calcutá	Calcutta
Cantão	Canton
Nova Déli	New Delhi
Pequim	Peking/Beijing
Seúl	Seoul
Singapura	Singapore
Tóquio	Tokyo

3.8.7.5 Latin America

As Bahamas	The Bahamas
Brasília	Brasilia
As Caraíbas (Pt)/ O Caribe (Br)	The Caribbean Islands
As Ilhas Malvinas	The Falkland Islands
Santiago do Chile	Santiago
São Salvador	San Salvador

3.8.7.6 Middle and Far East

Amã	Amman
Bagdade	Bagdad
Damasco	Damascus
Estambul	Istanbul
Jerusalém	Jerusalem
Meca	Mecca
Teérão (Pt)/Téerã (Br)	Tehran

3.8.8 Rivers

Amazonas	Amazon
Mississippi	Mississippi
Misuri	Missouri
Nilo	Nile
Reno	Rhine
Sena	Seine
Tames	Thames
Tejo	Tagus

3.8.9 Mountains

Os Alpes	Alps
Os Apalaches	Appalachians
Os Apeninos	Apennines
As Montanhas Rochosas	The Rocky Mountains
Os Pirinéus	Pyrenees
A Serra da Estrela	Estrela Mountains
A Serra Nevada	Sierra Nevada
Os Andes	The Andes

3.9 Abbreviations and acronyms

Abbreviations and acronyms are widely used in the Portuguese-speaking world. Abbreviations, unless otherwise noted, are pronounced as if they were words. Those that are pronounced letter by letter are marked with an asterisk. For personal titles refer to section 3.5.2.

3.9.1 Common abbreviations

a.C.*	antes de Cristo	B.C.
Apdo.	Apartado	Post Office Box
Av.	Avenida	Avenue
Bac.	Bacharelato	3-year college degree (in Portugal)
C.P.*	Caminhos de Ferro Portugueses	Portuguese Railways
cap.	capítulo	chapter
cfr.	confronte-se	compare
Cia.	Companhia	Company
cta.	conta	account
cte.	corrente	checking/current
D.	Dom	Mister
D.^a	Dona	Ms., Miss, Mrs.
d.C.*	depois de Cristo	A.D.
E	Este	East
exp.	exemplo	example
Fr.	Frei	Fray, Brother
G.N.R.*	Guarda Nacional Republicana	National Guard

id.	idem	idem
Lic.	Licenciatura	4-year college degree
Mons.	Monsenhor	Monseigneur
N	Norte	North
N.^a S.^a	Nossa Senhora	Our Lady
N.B.	Nota Bene	Please Note
NE	Nordeste	Northeast
NO	Noroeste	Northwest
n^o	número	number
O	Oeste	West
°	grau(s)	degrees
Pç.	Praça	Plaza
P.S.*	Post Scriptum	Post Script
P.S.P.*	Polícia de Segurança Pública	Public Safety Organization
pág.	página	page
PJ	Polícia Judiciária	(criminal) police
R.	Rua	Street
S	Sul	South
SE	Sudeste	Southeast
séc.	século	century
SO	Sudoeste	Southwest
Sta./Sto.	Santa/Santo	Saint
tel.	telefone	phone number

3.9.2 Abbreviations of weights and measures

cm	centímetros	centimeters
cm²	centímetros quadrados	square centimeters
cm³	centímetros cúbicos	cubic centimeters
gr.	grama	gram
h.	hora	hour
hec.	hectares	hectares
kg.	quilograma	kilogram
km/h	quilómetros por hora	kilometers per/hour
kw.	quilowatts	kilowatts
l	litros	liters
m	metros	meters
m²	metros quadrados	square meters
m³	metros cúbicos	cubic meters
mm	milímetros	milimeters

3.9.3 National and international organizations

BM*	Banco Mundial (World Bank)
CD*	Corpo Diplomático (Diplomatic Corps)
CDS* (Pt)	Centro Democrático Social
CE*	Comunidade Europeia (EC)
CGTP*	Confederação Geral dos Trabalhadores Portugueses
CGTP-IN*	Confederação Geral dos Trabalhadores Portugueses-Intersindical Nacional
CML*	Câmara Municipal de Lisboa
CPLP*	Comunidade dos Países de Língua Portuguesa
EUA*	Estados Unidos da América (USA)
FMI*	Fundo Monetário Internacional (IMF)
FNLA*	Frente Nacional de Libertação de Angola
FRELIMO	Frente de Libertação de Moçambique
FRETILIN	Frente Revolucionária de Timor-Leste Independente
MERCOSUL	Mercado dos Países do Sul (economic union consisting of Brazil, Uruguay, Paraguay, and Argentina)
MPLA*	Movimento Popular da Libertação de Angola
NATO	Organização do Tratado do Atlântico Norte (NATO)
OLP*	Organização de Libertação da Palestina (PLO)
ONU	Organização das Nações Unidas (UNO)
OPEP	Organização dos Países Exportadores de Petróleo (OPEC)
PAIGC*	Partido Africano da Independência da Guiné e Cabo Verde
PALOP	Países Africanos de Língua Oficial Portuguesa
PCB*	Partido Comunista Brasileiro
PCBR*	Partido Comunista Brasileiro Revolucionário
PCP*	Partido Comunista Português
PDG*	Partido Democrático da Guiné
PESODUMO	Partido Socialista Democrata Unido de Moçambique
PEV*	Partido Ecológico “Os Verdes”
PI* (Br)	Partido Integralista
PIB*	Produto Interno Bruto
PIDE	Polícia Internacional de Defesa do Estado
PM* (Br)	Polícia Militar

PNB*	Produto Nacional Bruto
PP* (Pt)	Partido Popular
PPB*	Partido Progressista Brasileiro
PPM* (Pt)	Partido Popular Monárquico
PS* (Br) (Pt)	Partido Socialista
PSD* (Pt)	Partido Social Democrata
PT* (Br)	Partido Trabalhista
RDP*	Rádio Difusão Portuguesa
RENAMO	Resistência Nacional Moçambicana
RFA*	República Federal Alemã
RGA*	Reunião Geral de Alunos
RTP*	Rádio Televisão Portuguesa
SA*	Sociedade Anónima (Inc.)
SIC	Sociedade Independente de Comunicação
UNITA	União Nacional para a Independência Total de Angola

3.10 Numerals

The chief difference in the written representation of numbers in Portuguese is the use of the period to show separation between hundreds, thousands, millions, etc., and the use of a comma instead of a decimal point. Numbers are generally written out as words in letters and documents, whereas years and dates are presented in digit form. While tens and ones are separated by a hyphen in English, they are separated by *e* (and) in Portuguese. Hundreds and tens are also separated by *e*.

Examples:

Comprei vinte e cinco galinhas no mercado.

I bought twenty-five chickens at the market.

Nasceu no ano 1924.

He was born in the year 1924.

Years are pronounced as complete numbers in Portuguese so that 1924 is pronounced “mil novecentos e vinte e quatro.”

Centuries are always written with Roman numerals: “Século xx” – twentieth century.

3.10.1 Cardinal and ordinal numbers

1	um (f uma)	primeiro
2	dois (f duas)	segundo
3	três	terceiro
4	quatro	quarto
5	cinco	quinto
6	seis	sexto
7	sete	sétimo
8	oito	oitavo
9	nove	nono
10	dez	décimo
11	onze	décimo primeiro
12	doze	décimo segundo
13	treze	décimo terceiro
14	catorze	décimo quarto
15	quinze	décimo quinto
16	dezesseis, dezasseis	décimo sexto
17	dezesete, dezassete	décimo sétimo
18	dezoito	décimo oitavo
19	dezenove, dezanove	décimo nono
20	vinte	vigésimo
21	vinte e um	vigésimo primeiro
30	trinta	trigésimo
40	quarenta	quadragésimo
50	cinquenta	quinquagésimo
60	sessenta	sexagésimo
70	setenta	septuagésimo
80	oitenta	octogésimo
90	noventa	nonagésimo
100	cem	centésimo
101	cento e um	centésimo primeiro
200	duzentos	ducentésimo
300	trezentos	trecentésimo
400	quatrocentos	quadringentésimo
500	quinhentos	quingentésimo
600	seiscentos	seiscentésimo, sexcentésimo
700	setecentos	septingentésimo
800	oitocentos	octingentésimo
900	novecentos	nongentésimo
1.000	mil	milésimo
2.000	dois mil	dumilésimo

Some of the cardinal numbers also must agree in gender with the nouns they modify:

1 – um carro, uma casa

2 – dois carros, duas casas

Also all numbers ending in a hundred except for 100.

200 – duzentos carros, duzentas casas

All of the ordinal numbers are adjectives and therefore agree with their nouns in gender and number. When written, the ordinal numbers can be presented with the number plus the terminations *-o*, *-a*, *-os*, *-as* in superscript and underlined.

Examples:

56^a Reunião Anual dos Autores Nacionais

56th Annual Meeting of National Authors.

The larger numbers differ from English:

1.000.000 – um milhão

1.000.000.000 – mil milhões

1.000.000.000.000 – um bilhão

3.11 Measurements

3.11.1 Currencies

Angola	kwanza (m)
Brazil	real, reais (m)
Cape Verde	escudo (m)
Guinea Bissau	peso (m)
Moçambique	metical, meticais (m)
Portugal	euro (formerly: escudo) (m)
São Tomé and Príncipe	dobra (f)
United Kingdom	libra (f)
United States	dólar(es) (m)

3.11.2 Dates

In Portuguese, the date is always given in the following order: date, month, year.

Orally the date would be given thus:

Hoje são quinze de junho de mil novecentos e noventa e cinco.

Today is June 15, nineteen ninety-five.

In written discourse the date is presented in the following manner, with the day and year given in numerals:

A guerra acabou dia 2 de Janeiro de 1935.

The war ended on January 2, 1935.

In letter headings, the date may be given simply with numbers, starting with the day. The day, month, and year are separated by a hyphen or slash.

Example:

2-3-67 is March 2, 1967.

In letters the month may also be written out:

Example:

2 de Março, 1967

3.11.2.1 Months and days of the week

Months are capitalized in Portugal and Africa but not in Brazil. Days are not capitalized in Portuguese.

Months

Janeiro	January
Fevereiro	February
Março	March
Abril	April
Maió	May
Junho	June
Julho	July
Agosto	August
Setembro	September
Outubro	October
Novembro	November
Dezembro	December

Days

domingo	Sunday
segunda-feira	Monday
terça-feira	Tuesday
quarta-feira	Wednesday
quinta-feira	Thursday
sexta-feira	Friday
sábado	Saturday

The ending *-feira* can be omitted. Week days can be abbreviated in written informal discourse: 2^a, 3^a, 4^a, 5^a, 6^a.

3.11.3 Time

Time in Portuguese is represented as in English when written but instead of “am” and “pm” one uses *da manhã* (in the morning), *da tarde* (in the afternoon), *da noite* (at night). *Da madrugada* may occasionally be heard to indicate early morning (before sunrise).

There are several ways of telling the time in Portuguese.

Basic manner of asking the time:

—Que horas são?(Pt) /Que horas você tem? (Br)

In telling time, one o'clock and any time relating to one o'clock takes the singular form of *ser* while any other time is given by the plural form of this verb. The feminine forms of 1 and 2 (*uma* and *duas*) are used for the hour.

Examples:

1:12 pm

É uma e doze da tarde.

It is one twelve in the afternoon.

12:40 pm

É uma menos vinte da tarde.

It is twenty to one in the afternoon.

After the half hour, the time may be told either referring to the next hour or the last so that 12:40 may also be stated as *são doze e quarenta* (it is twelve forty).

2:17 pm

São duas e dezessete da tarde.

It is two seventeen in the afternoon.

The twenty-four hour clock is used for official times (train schedules etc.).

The following expressions are also used to tell time:

meia-noite (midnight)

Faltam vinte minutos para a meia-noite.

It is twenty to midnight.

(*meia-noite* is a feminine word)

meio-dia (noon)

São dez para o meio-dia.

It is ten to twelve.

(*meio-dia* is a masculine word)

um quarto (quarter hour)

São três e um quarto.

It is a quarter past three.

meia (half hour)

São seis e meia.

It is half past six.

em ponto (sharp)

Então encontramos-nos às cinco em ponto.

We'll meet at 5 sharp then.

atrasado (late)

Ceguei atrasado ao jantar.

I arrived late to the dinner.

adiantado (early)

Não conheço ninguém que chegue adiantado.

I don't know anyone who arrives early.

a horas (on time)

Não gosto de chegar nem atrasada nem adiantada, mas a horas.

I don't like to arrive early or late, but on time.

a tempo (in time)

Quase não chegavam a tempo de apanhar o comboio. (Pt)

They barely arrived in time to catch the train.

3.11.4 Weight

The verb *pesar* is used to express weight, followed by a metric weight unit.

Example:

Peso 160 quilos.

I weigh 160 kilos.

Weight can also be used to designate a quantity.

Example:

Comprei dois quilos de morangos.

I bought two kilos of strawberries.

Note: All weight units are masculine, including *grama*, except for *tonelada*.

uma tonelada

um quilo, dez quilos

um grama, duzentos gramas

um decigrama

um miligrama

um micrograma

3.11.5 Distance

All Lusophone countries use the metric system. Units for length, and therefore distance, are the following in Portuguese:

metros (meters)
quilómetros (kilometers)

Non-metric terms:

passos (steps)
degraus (stair steps)

The words for English measurements are:

um pé (foot)
uma milha (mile)
uma polegada (inch)

In order to express distances with units of measurement, use *ficar + a* or *ser + a*.

Examples:

A estação fica a 5 quilómetros daqui.

The station is five kilometers from here.

Sintra é a 30 quilómetros de Lisboa.

Sintra is 30 kilometers from Lisbon.

In order to express distances without units (i.e. far from, or near) use *ficar* or *ser*.

Some terms include:

longe (far away)
longe de (far from)
perto (close by)
perto de (close to)
entre (between)
para além de (beyond)
antes de (before)
depois de (after)

Examples:

A minha casa fica na Rua das Cruzes para além do cinema novo.

My house is on Cruzes Road beyond the new movie theater.

Vamos ao restaurante brasileiro, é aqui perto.

Let's go to the Brazilian restaurant, it's close by.

3.11.6 Temperatures

All Portuguese-speaking countries use centigrades to express temperature.

The word *graus* means “degrees.”

The temperature in Portuguese is expressed in the following ways:

Estar + temperature

Estão 24 graus. It [the temperature] is 24 degrees.

A temperatura é de + temperature

A temperatura máxima é de 42 graus. The maximum temperature is 42 degrees.

3.11.7 Sizes

The verb *medir* is used to express height or length, followed by a metric weight unit. Note that *medir* is irregular in the first person singular of the present indicative.

Example:

— **Quanto mede?**

How tall are you?

— **Meço um metro e setenta (cm).** I'm 1 meter 70 tall.

Other vocabulary related to sizes:

For people: **baixo** (short), **alto** (tall).

Sizes of clothes, shoes and other objects can be expressed in different manners, either by exact numbers or in general categories such as small, medium, and large. It is suggested, since standards differ throughout the Lusophone world, that visitors always try on clothing and do not just depend on size indicators.

For clothes:

apertado	tight
comprido	long
curto	short
devolver o dinheiro	to return the money
experimentar	to try on
fica bem	it looks good
grande	large
largo	large, big
número	size
número acima, número abaixo	one size up/down
pequeno	small
que número calça(s)/veste(s)?	what size do you wear?
reclamação, reclamar	a/to return; to complain, complaint
trocar	to exchange

3.11.8 Quantities

The following terms are used to denote special quantities.

alguns	some, a few
década	decade
dezena	a quantity of ten
dúzia	dozen
imensos	a great quantity of
muito/a/os/as	many, a lot of
quarteirão	twenty-five (a “quarter”)
uma mão-cheia	a handful
um ramo	a bunch (of flowers)
vários	several

3.12 Interjections

3.12.1 Religious

Com os diabos! (Damn!, Devil take it!)

Deus nos/me valha/acuda! (God help us/me!)

Meu Deus! (My God!)

Nossa Senhora!, Minha Nossa Senhora! (Our Lady!)

Ó Céus! (Heavens!)

Ó Diabo! (Damn!)

Raios me partam! (Damn it!, literally “let thunderbolts split me!”)
(Pt)

Santo Deus! (Holy God!)

3.12.2 Pain

Au!, Ui! (Ouch!)

3.12.3 Surprise

A sério?! (Seriously?)

Ah!

Caramba! (Wow!)

Hã?! (the equivalent of “huh?” or “um?”)

Não me diga(s)! (You don’t say!)

O quê?! (What?!)

3.12.4 Rage

All terms which are extremely vulgar or profane are marked by an asterisk.

These are applied to a person:

Cabra!* (f) (Pt) (Bitch!)
Cabão!* (m) (Pt) (Asshole!)
Cabrona!* (f) (Pt) (Asshole! / Bitch!)
Cadela!* (f) (Bitch! / Whore!)
Filho da puta!* (m) (Son of a bitch!)
Filha da puta!* (f) (Bitch!)
Foda-se!* (Pt) (Fuck you!)
Idiota! Imbecil! (These are the least offensive and correspond to “You idiot!”)
Puta!* (f) (Whore! / Bitch!)
Vai-te foder!* (Pt) (Fuck you!)
Vagabunda!* (f) (Br) (Whore!)
Vagabundo!* (m) (Br) (Piece of shit!)
Vai apanhar no cu!* (Shove it up your ass!)
Veado!* (Br) (Pejorative term for homosexuals)
Bicha!* (Br) (Pejorative term for homosexuals)

These are used in general situations:

Caralho!* (Pt) (Fuck!)
Merda!* (Shit!)
Pomba!* (Br) (Fuck!)

3.12.5 Joy

Fabuloso! (Fabulous!)
Fantástico! (Fantastic!)
Magnífico! (Magnificent!)
Parabéns! (similar to “Congratulations!”)
Que beleza! (Br) (Wonderful!)

3.12.6 Warning

Atenção! (Look out!)
Cuidado! (Careful!)

3.12.7 Pity

Coitado/a! (You poor thing!)

Pobre diabo! (This expression is used to talk about a man, and not to the person. Poor devil!)

3.13 Collective nouns

uma alcateia	a pack of wolves
um bando	a flock of birds
um bando de ladrões	a band of thieves
uma cáfila	a herd of camels
um canavial	a bamboo forest
um cardume	a school of fish
um engenho	a farm for sugar production (with the machinery)
um enxame	a swarm of bees
um gangue	a gang
uma junta	a team of oxen
um laranjal	an orange grove
uma manada	a herd of cattle
uma matilha	a pack of dogs
uma ninhada	a group of baby animals
um olival	an olive grove
um pinhal	a pine forest
um pomar	a grove (in general)
um rebanho	a herd of sheep
uma récua	a group of beasts of burden
um souto	a chestnut grove
uma turma	a class (such as a group of students at the same level); a group of friends. (Br)
uma vara	a group of pigs
uma vinha	a vineyard

3.14 Animal sounds

Animal	Verb
abelha-<i>bee</i>	zumbir, zubar
burro-<i>donkey, burro</i>	zurrar
camelo-<i>camel</i>	blaterar

cão/cachorro –dog	ladrar, latir (bark), ganir (whine), uivar (howl)
gato –cat	miar
cavalo –horse	relinchar
corvo –crow	crocitar
galinha –hen	cacarejar
galo –rooster	cantar
leão –lion	rugir
macaco –monkey	guinchar
ovelha –sheep	balir
papagaio –parrot	palrar
pássaro –bird	cantar (sing), piar (chirp, peep as in chicks)
pato –duck	grasnar
peru –turkey	grugulejar
pombo –dove, pigeon	arrulhar
porco –pig	grunhir (grunt)
rã –frog	coaxar
rato –mouse	chiar
serpente –snake	assobiar
vaca –cow	mugir

3.15 Onomatopoeic words

bramir	to roar (as in a beast or the ocean)
chapinhar	to splash
chiar	to squeak (as in a mouse or a door)
cochichar	to speak in a low voice (has a negative connotation)
ding-dong	ding-dong
o frufriu	rustle (noun)
gaguejar	to stutter
gargarejar	to gargle
guinchar	to squeal
pipilar	to chirp
pum!	boom!
ranger	to squeak
ribombar	to thunder
roncar	to snore
ronronar	to purr
sibilar	to whiz (as in a bullet)

sussurar	to whisper
tique-taque	tick tock
troar	to thunder
um silvo	the sound of a ship's or train's whistle
zás-trás	the sound of a slap

3.16 Terms of courtesy

The following are terms and expressions used to express thanks, ask for favors, and beg pardon. The conditional form may also be used to express politeness and this use is being taken over by the indicative *pretérito imperfeito* in contemporary usage.

Com licença	Excuse me. To be used when walking in front of someone or when asking to be excused from a table, meeting, etc. Examples: “Com licença,” disse António tentando passar entre várias pessoas. “Excuse me,” said Antonio, trying to pass through the group of people. “Com licença,” disse o deputado para pedir a palavra. “Excuse me,” said the congressman when asking leave to speak. Quando jantávamos em casa dos meus avós, tínhamos de pedir sempre licença antes de nos levantarmos. When we used to eat at my grandparents', we always had to ask for permission before leaving the table.
Perdão	Excuse me, I'm sorry. To be used when approaching someone to ask a direction, to correct oneself, etc. Example: Perdão mas estão chamando a Senhora Diretora no telefone. (Br) Excuse me, you have a call.

Desculpe	The same as <i>perdão</i> but less formal. Example: Desculpe, sabe dizer-me onde fica o Ministério da Educação? Excuse me, can you tell me where the Ministry of Education is?
Desculpa	The same as <i>desculpe</i> but the least formal due to the informal form of address <i>tu</i> . Example: Desculpa, não queria magoar-te/te magoar. I'm sorry, I did not mean to hurt you.
Se faz favor	The same as <i>por favor</i> . If enunciated very fast, becomes “sefachfavor.” (Pt) Example: Uma cerveja, se faz favor. A beer, please.
Por favor	Please. Example: Pode tomar nota dum recado, por favor? Could you take a message please?
Pois não?	Yes [may I help you]?: opens a dialogue where a service is implied, e.g. waiting at a table, helping a customer, etc. Only used in Brazil. Example: Pois não, a senhora deseja alguma coisa? Hello, what would you like to order? Sim, podia me trazer um suco de abacaxi e um sanduiche de queijo? Yes, I'd like a pineapple juice and a cheese sandwich, please.
Obrigado/a	Thank you. The ending agrees with the speaker's gender. Example: “Obrigada,” disse Júlia quando recebeu o presente. “Thank you,” said Julia upon receiving the gift.

De nada.	<p>You're welcome.</p> <p>Example: "De nada," respondi quando ela me agradeceu. "You're welcome," I said when she thanked me.</p>
Fazer o obséquo de . . .	<p>To request a favor. This is very formal.</p> <p>Example: Fazia-me o obséquo de chamar o Director? (Pt) Could you do me a favor and call the manager?</p>
Posso . . . ?	<p>May I?</p> <p>Example: Posso entrar? May I come in?</p>
Desejava . . .	<p>I wish to . . . , I would like to . . .</p> <p>Example: Desejava enviar esta encomenda por correio aéreo. I wish to send this package by air mail.</p>
Queria . . .	<p>Same as <i>desejava</i>.</p> <p>Example: Queria 250 gr. de fiambre. I would like 250 grams of ham.</p>

4 Nouns and adjectives

4.1 Nouns and gender

Portuguese nouns all belong to one of two genders. All nouns which may combine with the article *o* are generally considered masculine, while all nouns which may combine with the article *a* are generally considered feminine. The noun decides the form for all adjectives which are used as its modifiers in both gender and number.

The gender of most Portuguese nouns can be easily identified by the ending. Words ending in *-o* are almost always masculine while words ending in *-a* are almost always feminine:

o carro (car)	a cadeira (chair)
o livro (book)	a mesa (table)
o sapato (shoe)	a casa (house)
o relógio (clock)	a justiça (justice)
o deserto (desert)	a caneta (pen)
o conceito (concept)	a loucura (insanity)

Most words ending in *-ade* are feminine:

a realidade (reality)
a verdade (the truth)
a mocidade (youth)
a velocidade (velocity)
a idade (age)
a vaidade (vanity)

Words ending in *-or* are generally masculine. In the case of words referring to professions, in order to show that the noun refers to a woman, an *-a* is added:

um jogador (male athlete or player)	uma jogadora (female athlete or player)
um cantor (male singer)	uma cantora (female singer)

Most words ending in *-ção* are feminine:

a condição (condition)
a tentação (temptation)
a perdição (perdition)
a salvação (salvation)
a maldição (curse)
a putrefacção (putrefaction)
a jurisdição (jurisdiction)

However, there are several exceptions to this general rule: *o coração* (heart), *o leão* (lion), *o cão* (dog [Pt]), *o pão* (bread), *o caldeirão* (a big, or communal, cooking pot), *o bastão* (stick). Often, the augmentatives of feminine words become masculine: *o portão* (entrance, big door or gate, from *a porta*, door); *o mulherão* (big woman, from *a mulher*, woman).

Most words ending in *-em* are feminine:

uma viagem (a trip or voyage)
uma passagem (a passage)
uma paisagem (a landscape)
uma mensagem (a message)

Exceptions include: *o homem* (man) and *o lobisomem* (werewolf)

Most words of Greek origin ending in *-ama*, *-ema*, and *-oma* are masculine despite ending in *-a* in Portuguese:

o grama (gram)
o telegrama (telegram)
o fonema (phoneme)
o estratagema (scheme)
o anátema (curse)
o coma (comma)
o axioma (axiom)
o problema (problem)

Some words are masculine and end in *-a* for the reason that historically they were (and mostly still are!) reserved exclusively for men:

o pirata (pirate – with a few exceptions!)
o papa (the pope)
o jesuíta (the jesuit)
o patriarca (patriarch)
o papá (father)

Some words ending in *-a* or *-o* may be either masculine or feminine depending upon whether the person referred to is male or female:

o modelo (male model)	a modelo (female model)
o artista (male artist)	a artista (female artist)

Other words following this pattern include:

o/a acrobata (acrobat)
o/a camarada (comrade)
o/a colega (colleague)
o/a compatriota (compatriot)
o/a dentista (dentist)
o/a homicida (murderer)
o/a indígena (indigenous person)
o/a infanticida (murderer of children)
o/a jornalista (journalist)
o/a pianista (pianist)
o/a patriota (patriot)
o/a suicida (person who commits suicide)
o/a violinista (violinist)

Words ending in *-e* generally do not follow any rule with regard to gender, and their gender must be sought in a dictionary.

The following words ending in *-nte* follow same pattern as the words in the previous group for masculine and feminine forms:

o/a gerente (manager)
o/a agente (agent)
o/a estudante (student)
o/a cliente (client)
o/a servente (servant)
o/a imigrante (immigrant)

Words with other endings which also follow this pattern include:

o/a herege (heretic)
o/a mártir (martyr)
o/a colegial (student in a private school)
o/a intérprete (interpreter)
o/a hóspede (guest)
o/a presidente (president)
o/a jovem (a youth)

Some words ending in *-e* change their ending to *-a* when referring to females:

o mestre (male teacher)	a mestra (female teacher)
o monge (monk)	a monja (nun)
o infante (son of the royal family)	a infanta (daughter of the royal family)

Some words have different forms when referring to women or men:

uma avó (a grandmother)	um avô (a grandfather)
uma baronesa (a baroness)	um barão (a baron)
uma condessa (a countess)	um conde (a count)
uma czarina (a czarina)	um czar (a czar)
uma duquesa (a duchess)	um duque (a duke)
uma embaixatriz (a female ambassador)	um embaixador (an ambassador)
uma freira (a nun)	um frade (a friar)
uma heroína (a heroine or female hero)	um herói (a male hero)
uma jogralesa (a female troubador)	um jogral (a male troubador)
uma marquesa (a marquise)	um marquês (a marquis)
uma poetisa* (a female poet)	um poeta (a male poet)
uma princesa (a princess)	um príncipe (a prince)
uma profetisa* (a female prophet)	um profeta (a male prophet)
uma rainha (queen)	um rei (a king)
uma rapariga (a girl or young woman, Pt)	um rapaz (a boy or young man)
uma ré (a female defendant)	um réu (a male defendant)
uma sacerdotisa (a priestess)	um sacerdote (a priest)

*In these cases, in current usage it is common to use the same (masculine) form in order to avoid sexist speech.

4.2 Number

4.2.1 General rule

The rules for pluralizing nouns also apply to adjectives.

In Portuguese as in English, the plurals of nouns are generally formed by adding *-s* if the word ends in a vowel and *-es* if the word ends in a consonant (*-r*, *-z*, or *-n*):

a casa (the house)	as casas
o jogador (the player)	os jogadores
o cânone (the literary canon)	os cânones
a raiz (the root)	as raízes
o rapaz (the boy)	os rapazes

For words ending in *-m*, the final *m* is replaced by *-n* before adding the plural *-s*:

o homem (the man)	os homens
a vagem (the pod)	as vagens

Words ending in an unstressed vowel + *s* do not change in the plural:

o lápis (the pencil)	os lápis
o ônibus (Br) (the bus)	os ônibus

4.2.2 Words ending in *-l*

For words ending in *-al*, *-el*, *-ol*, and *-ul*, the final *-l* is replaced by *-i* before adding the mark of the plural, *-s*. The plurals of words ending in *-ol* and *-el* have a written accent on that syllable.

o animal (the animal)	os animais
o azul (the blue)	os azuis
o casal (the couple)	os casais
o espanhol (the Spaniard)	os espanhóis
o hotel (the hotel)	os hotéis
o lençol (the sheet)	os lençóis
o papel (the paper)	os papéis
o paul (the swamp)	os pauis

Exceptions include: **mal**–**males**, **cônsul**–**cônsules**.

For words ending in unstressed *-il*, the final *-il* is replaced by *-eis*.

If the word ends in stressed *-il*, then the *-l* is replaced by *-s*.

o fóssil (the fossil)	os fósseis
o réptil (the reptile)	os répteis
o barril (the barrel)	os barris
o fuzil (the rifle)	os fuzis

4.2.3 Words ending in *-ão*

The general rule for pluralizing words ending in *-ão* is to replace the ending with *-õe* before adding the final *-s*.

a invenção (the invention)	as invenções
a limitação (the limitation)	as limitações
o casarão (the mansion)	os casarões
o coração (the heart)	os corações
o limão (the lemon)	os limões

There are some words ending in *-ão* whose plural forms end in *-ães*.

Example:

o alemão – os alemães (the German man – the German men)

o bastião (the bastion)
o cão (the dog)
o catalão (the Catalan)
o capitão (the capitan)
o capelão (the chaplain)
o charlatão (the charlatan)
o escrivão (the scribe)
o guardião (the guardian)
o pão (the bread)
o sacristão (the sacristan)
o tabelião (the notary)

The following words ending in *-ão* form the plural by simply adding a final *-s*.

Example: **irmão – irmãos** (brother – brothers)

a benção (the blessing)
o acordão (the agreement)
o cidadão (the citizen)
o cortesão (the courtesan)
o cristão (the Christian)
o desvão (the hiding place, garret)
o órfão (the orphan)
o órgão (the organ)
o pagão (the pagan)
o sótão (the attic)

4.2.4 Words with only plural forms

The following words exist only in their plural forms:

as **alvíssaras** (finder's reward; the tidings)
as **belas-artes** (the fine arts)
as **calendas** (the kalends – the first day of the month in the Roman calendar)
as **cãs** (the grey hairs)
as **condolências** (the condolences)
as **exéquias** (the funeral rites)
as **férias** (the vacation)
as **fezes** (the feces)
as **matinas** (the morning prayers)
as **núpcias** (the wedding celebration, the nuptials)
as **olheiras** (the bags under the eyes)
as **primícias** (the first fruits)
os **anais** (the annals)
os **antolhos** (Pt) (the blinders, blinkers, eyeshade)
os **arredores** (the surroundings)
os **esponsais** (the betrothment, engagement)
os **óculos** (the eyeglasses)
os **pêsames** (sympathy wishes regarding a death)
os **viveres** (reserve of food)

The four suits of cards are also always referred to in the plural:

as **copas** (hearts)
as **espadas** (spades)
os **ouros** (diamonds)
os **paus** (clubs)

4.3 Word order

4.3.1 Sentence structure

Subjects generally precede the verb in both questions and statements.

Note: The subject pronoun in Portuguese can always be omitted if it is obvious from the context or the verb form:

Examples:

Falo português.
I speak Portuguese.

Você quer ir almoçar?

Do you want to eat lunch?

Adverbs of negation usually come between the subject and the verb:

Example:

Ela não quer ir.

She does not want to go.

4.3.2 Nouns and their modifiers

- Articles always precede the noun.

Example:

Tenho um carro.

I have a car.

- Articles and demonstrative, possessive, and indefinite adjectives always precede the noun.

Examples:

O escritório está vazio.

The office is empty.

Este livro é interessante.

This book is interesting.

O meu tio é um pintor famoso.

My uncle is a famous painter.

Algumas pessoas ficaram doentes depois do jantar.

Some people were sick after the dinner.

- Indefinite adjectives which show negation generally precede the noun, but may follow it, especially if the noun is not modified by other adjectives and is at the end of a sentence.

Examples:

Não há nenhum restaurante português na minha cidade.

There are no Portuguese restaurants in my city.

Não há problema nenhum.

It's no problem.

- Numbers always precede the noun that they modify.

Example:

Visitei dois países de língua portuguesa no Verão.

I visited two Portuguese-speaking countries over the summer.

- Nationalities always follow the noun they modify.

Example:

Uma família italiana.

An Italian family.

- Non-quantitative adjectives generally follow the noun but can also follow the verb.

Examples:

A casa é grande.

The house is big.

A casa nova do Luís é grande.

Luís's new house is big.

- Certain adjectives have different meanings depending on whether they occur before or after the noun they modify. When the adjective comes in its regular position, i.e. after the noun, it denotes a literal meaning, whereas before the verb it acquires a figurative meaning.

Examples:

Comprei um carro novo.

I bought a brand new car.

Comprei um novo carro.

I bought a new/another car (it's only new to me).

Note: Adjectives may also precede the noun when for purposes of emphasis the speaker wishes to stress its uniqueness. In this case the adjective functions as an epithet.

Examples:

O conhecido escritor daquela cidade entrou como actor no filme.

The famous writer from that town starred in the movie. (In this case "famous writer" is actually used as one term.)

O escritor famoso daquela cidade entrou como actor no filme.

The writer who is famous from that town starred in the movie. (The town may have other writers but they are not famous.)

4.4 Adjectives

Adjectives in Portuguese agree in number and gender with the noun that they modify. The rules for the formation of plural and feminine forms are the same as those for nouns (see Sections 4.1 and 4.2).

Gosto de gatos pretos.

I like black cats.

4.4.1 Adjectives with different meaning depending on position

The following adjectives have different meanings depending on whether they precede or follow the noun. If they follow the noun,

the meaning is literal, and if they precede the noun, they are figurative.

alto	<p>Eu vivo num prédio muito alto. I live in a very tall building.</p> <p>Os altos dignatários de várias nações reuniram-se em Praga. The high (important) dignitaries of several nations met in Prague.</p>
antigo	<p>Aquele carro antigo vale muito dinheiro. That old (antique) car is worth a lot of money.</p> <p>O meu antigo carro era preto. My old (former) car was black.</p>
grande	<p>Comprei uma casa grande. I bought a big house.</p> <p>Fernando Pessoa é um grande poeta. Fernando Pessoa is a great poet.</p>
novo	<p>Tenho uma nova namorada. I have a new girlfriend.</p> <p>Tenho uma namorada nova. I have a young girlfriend. (In colloquial speech this sentence may mean the same as the previous one.)</p>
pobre	<p>As famílias pobres receberam um subsídio do governo. The poor families received money from the government.</p> <p>O pobre homem ainda está no hospital. The poor (showing pity) man is still in the hospital.</p>
simples	<p>Embora fosse muito rico, era um homem simples. Although he was rich, he was a very simple man (unpretentious).</p> <p>Ele era um simples empregado do estado. He was a mere government employee.</p>
velho	<p>Joguei fora meus sapatos velhos. (Br) I threw out my old shoes.</p> <p>O meu velho amigo veio me visitar. My old (long time) friend came to visit me.</p>

4.4.2 Demonstrative adjectives

For demonstrative adjectives see Section 7.2.6.

4.4.3 Possessive adjectives

The possessive adjectives in Portuguese agree with the possessor in number and person and with the object possessed in number and gender. The formation of plural forms is the same as that for nouns. In Portugal the possessives are usually preceded by the definite article, but in Brazil they sometimes are not.

Note: The possessive pronouns share the same form as the adjectives but always require the definite article, and the object is omitted.

The forms are the following:

meu(s), minha(s)	my
teu(s), tua(s)	your (singular, informal)
seu(s), sua(s)	his, her, its, your (formal) (Pt); your (informal) (Br)
dele, dela	his, her, its (unambiguous form)
nosso(s), nossa(s)	our
vosso(s), vossa(s) (Pt)	your (pl) (Pt)
seu(s), sua(s)	your (formal) (Pt); your (informal) (Br)
deles, delas	their (unambiguous)
seu(s), sua(s)	their

Note: *Vosso* and *vossa* are not used in Brazil; in Portugal, *seu(s)*, *sua(s)* is more formal than the former for “your” (pl).

Examples:

Gosto muito dos seus sapatos novos, Sra. Noémia. (Pt)

I like your new shoes very much, Ms. Noémia.

Gosto muito de seus sapatos novos, Dulce. (Br)

Gosto muito de teus sapatos novos, Dulce. (This implies closeness, or a very informal relationship.)

(A) nossa mãe está muito contente.

Our mother is very happy.

Tenho o bilhete dele, mas não tenho o meu.

I have his ticket but I don't have mine.

5 Verbs

Portuguese verbs fall into three groups based upon their infinitive endings. These are *-ar*, *-er*, and *-ir*. There are six verbal inflexions which correspond to seven personal pronouns: *eu*, *tu*, *você* (which shares the same inflexion as *ele/ela*), *nós*, *vós*, and *vocês* (which shares the forms with *eles/elas*). The *vós* form is now archaic. In most regions of Brazil, *você* is usually used instead of *tu*, which is standard in Portugal and Lusophone Africa.

5.1 Simple indicative mode tenses

The indicative mode in Portuguese is used for main clauses and subordinate clauses after many expressions.

5.1.1 Present tense

The present tense (*Presente do Indicativo*) is used to express actions in the present, thoughts, opinions, physical and mental states, and descriptions.

The conjugations for regular verbs in the present are given here to give a basic idea of the Portuguese verb system. There are many irregular verbs in the present whose forms are given in conjugation manuals.

	<i>-ar</i> falar (to speak)	<i>-er</i> comer (to eat)	<i>-ir</i> resumir (to summarize)
eu (I)	falo	como	resumo
tu (you)	falas	comes	resumes
você (you) } ele (he) } ela (she) }	fala	come	resume
nós (we)	falamos	comemos	resumimos
vocês (you), } eles (they-m) } elas (they-f) }	falam	comem	resumem

Examples:

Acho que tu precisas de ter mais cuidado. (Pt)

I think that you need to be more careful.

Os convidados chegam hoje.

The guests arrive today.

Note 1: The present can also be used to express an idea in the future, or a customary action in the present.

Examples:

Faço as compras amanhã.

I'll go shopping tomorrow.

Eles têm sempre aulas de manhã.

They always have classes in the morning.

Note 2: Many verbs in Portuguese have an irregular stem in the present, often in the first person singular.

Examples:

dar:	dou
dizer:	digo
dormir:	durmo
estar:	estou
fazer:	faço
ir:	vou
ouvir:	ouço
pedir:	peço
perder:	perco
poder:	posso
pôr	ponho
seguir:	sigo
sentir:	sinto
ser:	sou
ter:	tenho
trazer:	trago
ver:	vejo
vir:	venho

5.1.2 Preterit tense

The preterit tense (*Pretérito Perfeito*) is used to express the beginning or/and the end of an action in the past.

The following chart shows the endings to be added to the stem of the infinitive. There are many irregular verbs in the preterit which can be found in conjugation manuals.

	<i>-ar</i>	<i>-er</i>	<i>-ir</i>
eu	-ei	-i	-i
tu	(a)ste	(e)ste	(i)ste
você, ele, ela	-ou	(e)u	(i)u
nós	(á)mos (Pt) (a)mos (Br)	(e)mos	(i)mos
vocês, eles, elas	(a)ram	(e)ram	(i)ram

Examples:

Liguei para casa dos meus pais ontem.

I called my parents' house yesterday (the action was completed).

Soube desse problema quando ele o comentou comigo.

I found out about that problem when he told me about it. (This begins with the verb *saber* [to know], and ends with the verb *comentar* [to tell]).

Consegui abrir a janela com a ajuda deles.

I managed to open the window with their help.

Fui a Moçambique uma vez.

I went to Mozambique once.

Note: The preterite tense is used with “never” and “ever” or “any time.”

Nunca fui a São Tomé e Príncipe.

I never went to São Tomé and Príncipe.

5.1.3 Imperfect tense

Another past tense in Portuguese is the imperfect (*Preterito Imperfeito*). The following chart shows the endings to be added to the stem of the infinitive.

	<i>-ar</i>	<i>-er</i>	<i>-ir</i>
eu	-ava	-ia	-ia
tu	-avas	-ias	-ias
você, ele, ela	-ava	-ia	-ia
nós	-ávamos	-íamos	-íamos
vocês, eles, elas	-avam	-iam	-iam

Note: the *nós* form always takes an accent as shown above.

Some verbs are irregular in the *Imperfeito*. Their forms are the following:

pôr (to put): eu punha, tu punhas, você punha, etc.
ser (to be): eu era, tu eras, você era, etc.
ter (to have): eu tinha, tu tinhas, você tinha, etc.
vir (to come): eu vinha, tu vinhas, você vinha, etc.

The imperfect is used to express any other point of an action in the past (not the beginning or end). Some typical examples of its use are to express:

- descriptions
- physical and mental states (as it is difficult to know when they begin or end)
- clock time
- age (when not expressing birthdays, i.e. the beginning or end of an age)
- reported speech
- repeated actions
- continued actions
- interrupted actions (the interrupting action is normally expressed with the preterit)

Examples:

Quando eu tinha cinco anos morava em São Paulo.

When I was five years old, I lived in São Paulo.

Quando o menino estava doente, não queria tomar os seus medicamentos de três em três horas.

When the child was sick, he didn't want to take his medicine every three hours.

Eram cinco da tarde.

It was five o'clock.

Note: the imperfect is also used to show politeness in spoken discourse, where it replaces the conditional:

Por favor, podia abrir a janela?

Please, could you open the window?

Some verbs have different meanings when used in the imperfect as opposed to the preterite.

- **querer** (to want)

Examples:

Nós queríamos convidar esse casal.

We wanted to invite that couple. (We *intended* to invite that couple.)

Nós quisemos convidar esse casal.

We wanted to invite that couple. (We *tried* but encountered some obstacle, e.g. didn't have their phone number.)

- *conhecer* (to know/to meet)

Examples:

Gilberto já conhecia o treinador.

Gilberto already knew the coach.

Gilberto conheceu o treinador ontem.

Gilberto met the coach yesterday.

The verb *saber* in Portuguese works in a similar way: *sabia* means “to know” and *soube* means “to find out.”

- *ter + que* (to have to)

Examples:

Julião e Martinho tinham que encontrar uma solução.

Julião e Martinho had to find a solution.

Julião e Martinho tiveram que encontrar uma solução.

Julião e Martinho had to find a solution (and they found one).

The verb *poder* in Portuguese works in a similar way: [eu] *pude* conveys greater resolve and sense of completion than *podia*.

5.1.4 Future tense

The simple future tense (*Futuro* or *Futuro do Presente*) is not as commonly used in spoken discourse as the periphrastic form *ir* + infinitive. However, it is still the standard form in written formal discourse. The future is used to express an action in the future, as in English, and also to express conjecture in the present or future. The form is made by adding the following endings to the infinitive:

	<i>-ar</i>	<i>-er</i>	<i>-ir</i>
eu		-ei	
tu		-ás	
você, ele, ela		-á	
nós		-emos	
vocês, eles, elas		-ão	

The following verbs have an irregular root for the formation of both the future and the conditional:

dizer (to say), **eu direi**, etc.

fazer (to do or make), **eu farei**, etc.

trazer (to bring), **eu trarei**, etc.

Examples:

Augusto será com certeza um bom médico.

Augusto certainly will be a good doctor.

Um dia regressarei à minha cidade natal.

Some day I'll return to my native town.

Segundo a Bíblia, o mundo acabará pelo fogo.

According to the Bible, the world will end by fire.

Será que ele disse mesmo isso?

Did he really say that? (I wonder if he really said that.)

5.1.5 The conditional

The conditional (*Condicional* or *Futuro do Pretérito*) is used both in hypothetical situations (contrary to fact) in the present, to express politeness, and to express the future in the past.

	<i>-ar</i>	<i>-er</i>	<i>-ir</i>
eu		-ia	
tu		-ias	
você, ele, ela		-ia	
nós		-íamos	
vocês, eles, elas		-iam	

Examples:

Eu gostaria muito de visitar Salvador e Recife.

I would love to visit Salvador and Recife.

Poderia fazer-me um favor?

Could you do me a favor?

Se eu fosse rico, então compraria uma casa grande.

If I were rich, then I would buy a big house.

Ela disse-me ontem que viria visitar-me hoje.

She told me yesterday that she would visit me today.

Note: in informal contexts, the imperfect indicative is used instead.

5.1.6 The personal infinitive

The personal infinitive (*infinitivo pessoal* or *flexionado*) is formed by adding the endings below to the final *-r* of the infinitive. The endings are the same for all three groups of verbs.

	-ar	-er	-ir
eu		-	
tu		-es	
você, ele, ela		-	
nós		-mos	
vocês, eles, elas		-em	

The personal infinitive is used in subordinate clauses only after certain conjunctions, and only when the subject of the subordinate clause is different from that of the main clause; otherwise the ordinary infinitive is used. The uses of the personal infinitive are often similar to the uses of the present and imperfect subjunctive, except that there is no *que* at the beginning of the subordinate clause.

1. With *para* (in order to)

Example:

Para nós podermos pedir um empréstimo, o proprietário da casa tem de dar um preço para nós o mais depressa possível.

For us to be able to apply for a mortgage loan, the house owner has to give us a quote as soon as possible.

2. With *por* (because)

Example:

Por elas serem meio esquecidas é que Daniel ligou a lembrar da reunião.

Because [of the fact that] they are forgetful, Daniel called to remind [them] of the meeting.

3. With *ao*

Example:

Ao mudarem a mesa de lugar, uma das pernas caiu.

As they were moving the table, one of its legs fell off.

4. With *sem* (without)

Example:

Sem saberem quando você se vai embora, eles não podem fazer planos para a ida ao Porto.

Without knowing when you're leaving, they can't plan their trip to Oporto.

5. With *antes de* (before, until)

Example:

Antes de os alunos saberem nadar, o instrutor não os deixa ir para a piscina grande.

Until the students learn to swim, the instructor will not let them in the big swimming pool.

6. With *depois de* (after)

Examples:

A luz faltou 10 minutos depois de eles chegarem.

There was a power outage (power cut) ten minutes after they arrived home.

Depois de os pais fecharem a porta é que as crianças se lembraram que queriam ir no banheiro. (Br)

After the parents had locked the door, the children remembered that they wanted to go to the bathroom.

7. With impersonal constructions such as *é possível* (it is possible), *é triste* (it's sad), etc.

Examples:

É conveniente telefonares a saber a se o voo não foi cancelado. (Pt)

It's convenient that you [should] call to find out whether the flight was canceled.

É boa ideia eles chegarem meia-hora antes.

It's a good idea for them to arrive half an hour earlier.

8. With a nominalized verb (variation of the previous case)

Example:

Aprenderem chinês pode ser útil no futuro.

It may be useful in the future for [you/them] to learn Chinese.

9. With an anaphoric structure using the preposition *a*, or emphasizing the subject.

Example:

“O 8 de Março é o nosso dia [da Mulher]. Somos nós a definirmos a maneira como queremos comemorá-lo” (M. I. Casa, *NoTMOc: Notícias de Moçambique*, 7 April 1999).

March 8 is our day [Women's Day]. We are the ones to define the manner in which we want to commemorate it.

10. With the preposition *de* in various structures, as long as it involves a different subject in each clause, or a different emphasis.

Example:

“A proposta veio de constataremos que, na tradição makhuwa, são principalmente as mulheres a fazerem as cerimónias de Makeya e que elas representam o vínculo com os antepassados” (M. I. Casa, *NoTMOc: Notícias de Moçambique*, 7 April 1999).

The proposition arose from our realizing that, in the Makhuwa tradition, it's mostly the women who do the Makeya ceremonies and they represent the link with the ancestors.

Note that in the second phrase of this example, the personal infinitive is linked to the periphrastic progressive construction (see Section 5.8.2) typical of European and Lusophone African Portuguese.

Note: As is evident in the examples just given, the personal infinitive, unlike the subjunctive, does not require tense agreement between subordinate and subordinating clauses.

5.2 Compound indicative mode tenses

The perfect tenses (*tempos compostos*) in Portuguese are formed with the verb *ter* combined with the past participle of the verb being used. For the formation and use of the two types of past participle in Portuguese, see Section 5.5.2.

5.2.1 Present perfect

The present perfect (*Pretérito Perfeito Composto*) is used to express an action that began in the recent past and has not yet been completed. However, it cannot be used simply to substitute for the simple preterite as in French, Italian, and Spanish spoken in Spain. Its use is much more similar to that of Latin American Spanish and to English present perfect. The present tense of *ter* is used. The verb *ter*, in the present, functions as an auxiliary.

Examples:

Ultimamente tenho feito muito exercício.

I have exercised a lot lately.

Eles não têm visto o Rogério. A última vez que o viram foi há um ano.

They haven't seen Rogério (recently). The last time they saw him was a year ago.

5.2.2 Pluperfect

The pluperfect (*Pretérito Mais-que-Perfeito*) has two forms, one simple and one compound (*composto*). The pluperfect tense is usually used with another verb in the past (never just by itself, unless the rest of the sentence is implied) to express an action that occurred before another action in the past. The compound form is the more commonly used of the two. It is made by combining the imperfect tense of *ter* with the past participle of the main verb.

Examples:

Maria já tinha nascido quando o homem-chegou à lua.

Maria had already been born when man arrived on the moon.

O ladrão já tinha fugido quando a polícia chegou.

The thief had already escaped when the police arrived.

The pluperfect can also be used in a negative sentence to indicate an action which had not yet happened when another action took place.

Example:

Manuel ainda não tinha saído quando eu lhe telefonei.

Manuel had not yet left when I called him.

The simple pluperfect is primarily used in written discourse. It has its own conjugation, formed by adding the endings below to the infinitive:

	<i>-ar</i>	<i>-er</i>	<i>-ir</i>
eu		-a	
tu		-as	
você, ele, ela		-a	
nós		-amos	
vocês, eles, elas		-aram	

Note: the only difference in pronunciation between the forms *falaras/falara* and the future forms *falarás/falará* is the stress:

ele falara (he had spoken); *ele falará* (he will speak)

tu falaras (you had spoken); *tu falarás* (you will speak).

5.2.3 Future Perfect

The future perfect (*Futuro do Presente Composto*) is used to express a future action which is completed before another action in the future. The future tense of *ter* is used, with the past participle of the main verb. It can also be used to express doubt about the past.

Examples:

Aos 50 anos, já terei viajado muito.

I will have traveled a lot by the time I'm 50.

O Afonso chega às 8 de avião. O meu voo sai às 6, portanto quando o Afonso chegar, eu já terei partido.

Afonso will arrive at 8 by plane. My flight leaves at 6, so by the time Afonso arrives I will have left.

Será que eles já terão ido a esse restaurante?

I wonder if they have gone to that restaurant.

5.2.4 Conditional perfect

The conditional perfect (*Condicional Composto* or *Futuro do Pretérito Composto*) is usually used to express the hypothetical result of a conditional (unreal) situation in the past. The conditional form of *ter* is used.

Examples:

Eu teria ido à praia se não tivesse chovido.

I would have gone to the beach if it hadn't rained.

Se eles não tivessem estudado tanto para o exame, não teriam tido uma boa nota.

If they had not studied so much for the exam, they would not have received a high grade.

The conditional perfect is also used to express conjecture in the past.

Example:

Como teriam descoberto?

I wonder how they found out.

5.3 The simple subjunctive mode tenses

The subjunctive mode (*conjuntivo* or *subjuntivo*) is primarily used in subordinate clauses, when there is a change of subject, after expressions and verbs which denote doubt, emotion, negation, or influence. The two clauses are usually connected by the conjunction *que*. It is also used in adjectival clauses with unspecific antecedents, and after some adverbial conjunctions. There are three simple subjunctive tenses in Portuguese: imperfect, present, and future.

Some examples of these expressions include:

1. Doubt: *duvidar* (to doubt), *não achar* (to not believe), *é duvidoso* (it is doubtful that), *talvez* (maybe – this does not take *que*)

Examples:

Duvido que ele chegue a tempo.

I doubt that he will arrive on time.

Talvez ela esteja sob a influência de espíritos malignos.

Maybe she is under the the influence of evil spirits.

2. Negation or refusal: *negar* (to deny), *não é* (it is not), *não dizer [que]* (to not say [that]), *não é verdade* (it is not true), *recusar* (to refuse), *não aceitar* (to not accept)

Example:

A pobre mulher negou que o seu marido fosse o culpado.

The poor woman denied that her husband was guilty.

3. Emotion: *alegrar-se* (to be happy), *estar triste* (to be sad), *lamentar* (to be sorry), *estar furioso* (to be angry)

Example:

Lamento que não estejas comigo. (Pt)

I am sorry that you are not with me.

4. Influence: *mandar* (to command), *exigir* (to order), *dizer* (to tell – only when an indirect command is expressed), *pedir* (to request), *fazer*

com (to make [someone do something]), *impedir* (to prevent something), *querer* (to want [something to happen])

Examples:

Quero que você me faça um favor.

I want you to do me a favor.

A mãe sempre dizia às filhas que não saíssem sozinhas.

The mother always told her daughters not to go out alone.

Ele impediu que eu fizesse um grande erro.

He prevented me from committing a great error.

Note: When *querer* combines with a verb of information (*saber*, to know, *conhecer*, to know), it no longer takes the subjunctive.

Example:

Quero saber o que eles fizeram para terem tanto sucesso.

I want to know what they did to have so much success.

5. Unspecific or unknown antecedents: the subjunctive is used if the object referred to in the clause is either unspecific or cannot actually be named because it is unknown.

Examples:

Pedro quer conhecer uma mulher que fale sete línguas.

Peter wants to meet a woman who speaks seven languages.

Quero uma casa que tenha quatro quartos e uma sala grande.

I want a house that has four bedrooms and a large living room.

Note: If the antecedent is specific or known, the indicative is used:

Procuro o meu livro que tem a capa vermelha.

I am looking for my book that has the red cover.

6. After *antes de* (before) and *depois que* (after).

Example:

Dá-me o dinheiro que tens antes que eu te dê um tiro. (Pt)

Give me the money you have before I shoot you.

7. To express finality with *para que* (so that), *a fim de que* (so that).
8. To express concession with *embora* (although), *ainda que* (even if), *mesmo que* (even if).

Example:

Mesmo que me dê mil escudos, não te empresto o meu carro.

Even if you give me ten thousand escudos, I won't lend you my car.

Note: For actions or events that concern a moment in the future and are conveyed using similar constructions to the above, please refer to Section 5.3.3 (Future subjunctive).

5.3.1 Present subjunctive

The present subjunctive (*Presente do Conjuntivo Subjuntivo*) is used after a main verb in the present to express an action or state in the present or future.

The root of present subjunctive forms is the first person singular (*eu*) form of the present indicative. Verbs with irregular forms in the present therefore retain this irregularity in the present subjunctive. The endings are the following:

	<i>-ar</i>	<i>-er and -ir</i>
eu	-e	-a
tu	-es	-as
você, ele, ela	-e	-a
nós	-emos	-amos
vocês, eles, elas	-em	-am

The following verbs have irregular roots in the present subjunctive:

querer (to want): **eu queira**, etc.

saber (to know): **eu saiba**, etc.

ser (to be): **eu seja**, etc.

estar (to be): **eu esteja**, etc.

ir (to go): **eu vá**, etc.

haver (impersonal – “there is,” “there exists”): **haja**.

Examples:

Talvez eu também possa ir.

Maybe I can go too.

É pena que ele não fale inglês.

It's a shame that he does not speak English.

Recomendo que você vá no Brasil no Ano Novo.

I recommend that you go to Brazil for the New Year.

5.3.2 Past subjunctive

The past subjunctive (*Pretérito Imperfeito do Conjuntivo/Subjuntivo*) is formed from the third person plural of the preterite whose last syllable is replaced by the endings below. The endings are the same for the three groups of verbs.

	<i>-ar</i>	<i>-er</i>	<i>-ir</i>
eu		-sse	
tu		-sses	
você, ele, ela		-sse	
nós		-ssemos	
vocês, eles, elas		-ssem	

Example: **dizer** (to say/to tell): **eu dissesse**.

The past subjunctive is used after verbs and expressions which require the subjunctive in the past, and also in the conditional in hypothetical statements concerning the present which are contrary to fact.

Examples:

Embora não se queixasse, ela tinha frequentemente dores de estômago.

Even though she did not complain, she often suffered from stomach pains.

Se eu tivesse muito dinheiro, compraria uma casa nova.

If I had a lot of money, I would buy a new house.

Me falaram que fosse à entrevista às 2 horas. (Br)

They told me to go to the interview at 2 p.m.

5.3.3 Future subjunctive

The root of the forms for the future subjunctive (*Futuro do Conjuntivo/ Subjuntivo*) is that of the third person plural of the preterit. The *-am* of the form is replaced by the endings given in the table. They are the same for all three groups of verbs.

	<i>-ar</i>	<i>-er</i>	<i>-ir</i>
eu		-	
tu		-es	
você, ele, ela		-	
nós		-mos	
vocês, eles, elas		-em	

The future subjunctive is used to express the future in the subordinate clause only after certain conjunctions, namely *se*, *enquanto*, *quando*, and the expressions *sempre que* and *o que*.

Examples:

Tudo o que quiserem dar será bem-vindo.

Anything that they want to give will be well received.

Me liga amanhã quando tu acordar (Br, reg)

Call me tomorrow when you wake up.

Enquanto não nos reembolsarem, não podemos ir de férias.

Until they pay us back, we can't go on vacation.

5.4 Compound subjunctive mode tenses

Compound tenses are made up of two verbal forms: the past participle of the main verb, combined with the appropriately conjugated form of the auxiliary verb *ter* (*tenha feito, tivesse feito, tiver feito*).

The use of a compound tense usually means that there are two actions involved and that one takes place prior to the other.

The compound tenses in the subjunctive are principally used in the same cases as their indicative counterparts but after the expressions which always elicit the subjunctive in the simple tense.

5.4.1 Present perfect subjunctive

The Present Subjunctive of *ter* is used, combined with the past participle of the verb you want to use.

The present perfect subjunctive (*Pretérito Perfeito do Conjuntivo/Subjuntivo Composto*) is used to express an action anterior to an action in the present after any of the verbs or expressions that elicit the subjunctive mode. It is only used in subordinate clauses or after *talvez*.

Examples:

Não acho que os meus alunos tenham estudado o suficiente para o exame.

I don't think that my students have studied enough for the exam.

Vamos almoçar no Mario's, espero que Tânia tenha reservado uma mesa ontem.

Let's have lunch at Mario's, I hope Tânia reserved a table.

5.4.2 Pluperfect subjunctive

The imperfect subjunctive of *ter* is used combined with the past participle of the verb you want to use.

The pluperfect or past perfect subjunctive (*o Pretérito Mais-que-Perfeito do Conjuntivo/Subjuntivo*) is used to express an action which occurred before another action in the past after verbs which take the subjunctive, and also in hypothetical situations contrary to fact in the past.

With hypothetical situations, the pluperfect subjunctive may combine with the conditional perfect or the conditional depending on whether the result is in the past or present.

Examples:

Se eu tivesse nascido na Alemanha, teria aprendido alemão desde criança.

If I had been born in Germany, I would have learned German as a child.

Se eu tivesse nascido na Alemanha, hoje falaria alemão fluentemente.

If I had been born in Germany, today I would be able to speak German fluently.

This tense is often used with reported speech in the past.

Example:

O inspe(c)tor disse que não acreditava que o suspeito tivesse saído do prédio antes de o assassinato se dar.

The inspector stated that he did not believe that the suspect had left the building before the murder was committed.

5.4.3 Future perfect subjunctive

The future perfect subjunctive (*Futuro Composto do Conjuntivo / Subjuntivo*) is used to express an action which is completed before another action in the future, after the same expressions that take the simple future subjunctive. The future subjunctive of *ter* is used.

Examples:

Assim que o avião tiver atingido uma altitude estável, se servirão as bebidas.

As soon as the plane has reached cruising altitude, the drinks will be served.

Quando tiveres acabado o exame, podes fazer as perguntas que quiseres. (Pt)

When you have finished the exam, then you can ask all the questions you like.

5.5 Present and past participles

5.5.1 The present participle

The present participle is formed by adding *-ante* to all *-ar* verbs, and *-ente* to all *-er* and *-ir* verbs.

While it is not used as frequently as in English, several present participles are used as substantives in everyday speech.

Examples:

a nascente (the water spring)

a parturiente (the woman in labor)

a vidente (the clairvoyant)

o nascente (the sunrise)

o poente (the sunset)

o poluente (the polluting agent)

o/a **amante** (the lover)
 o/a **assaltante** (the robber)
 o/a **assinante** (the subscriber)
 o/a **assistente** (the assistant)
 o/a **transeunte** (the walker, passer-by) (Pt)

5.5.2 The past participle

The past participle is formed by adding the ending *-ado* to the root of *-ar* verbs, and *-ido* to the root of *-er* and *-ir* verbs.

The following verbs have irregular past participles:

abrir (aberto)
cobrir (coberto)
dizer (dito)
escrever (escrito)
fazer (feito)
pôr (posto)
ver (visto)
vir (vindo)

Some verbs in Portuguese have two participles, one irregular and one regular. The irregular forms, in these cases, are used as adjectives with the verb *estar*, while the regular forms combine with the verb *ter* in the perfect tenses, or the verb *ser* in the passive voice.

	Regular form	Irregular form
aceitar	aceitado	aceite (Pt); aceito/a (Br)
acender	acendido	aceso
eleger	elegido	eleito
emergir	emergido	emerso
entregar	entregado	entregue
expressar	expressado	expresso
extinguir	extinguido	extinto
ganhar	ganhado	ganho
gastar	gastado	gasto
imprimir	imprimido	impresso
inserir	inserido	inserto
morrer	morrido	morto
omitir	omitido	omisso
pagar	pagado	pago
romper	rompido	roto
salvar	salvado	salvo

Note: When functioning as adjectives, the participles must agree with the nouns they modify.

Examples:

A loteria foi ganha por um grupo de sete pessoas.

The lottery was won by a group of seven people.

Note: In many cases the irregular past participle can be used as a noun.

Example:

O morto foi levado para a morgue.

The dead man was taken to the morgue.

5.6 Imperative

The imperative is used to give commands. There are forms for the second person singular and plural (both informal and formal); the first person plural (we) takes the corresponding subjunctive form of the present. The subject pronoun is omitted.

Note: in European Portuguese, the unstressed (clitic) pronouns follow affirmative commands and precede negative commands.

Examples:

Passa-me o sal.

Pass me the salt.

Não te atrases.

Don't be late.

Não me digas mentiras.

Don't tell me lies.

5.6.1 Second person informal (*tu*)

The affirmative command for the second person informal of regular verbs is the *tu* form of the present indicative, with the *-s* removed.

Examples:

Come! (Eat!)

Fala! (Speak!)

The following verbs have irregular imperative forms:

ser (to be): **sê.**

dizer (to say): **diz.**

fazer (to do/to make): **faz.**

The negative commands share the form of the present subjunctive.

Example:

Não comas tão depressa!

Don't eat so fast!

5.6.2 Other imperative forms

All other imperative forms are the same as the present subjunctive without the subject pronoun.

Examples:

Vamos! (Let's go!)

A mãe disse-lhes “Não falem com desconhecidos!”

The mother told them, “Don't talk to strangers!”

5.7 The gerund

The gerund (*Gerúndio*) is formed by removing the final *-r* from the infinitive and adding *-ndo*.

The gerund may be used after the verb *estar* to form the present progressive (in Brazilian Portuguese) and it is also used to substitute the structure *Quando/When* + conjugated verb for synthesis when the following clause shares the same subject.

Examples:

Estou comendo. (Br)

I am eating.

Ele comia, pondo rapidamente a comida na boca.

He ate, rapidly shoving the food into his mouth.

5.8 Periphrastic verb forms

There are three periphrastic structures (formed by a verb and an infinitive).

5.8.1 Continuous tenses

The continuous tenses in Portugal are formed with *estar* + *a* + infinitive in the present, past, or future. In Brazil, they are formed with *estar* + gerund. They are used to show an action in progress while it is occurring.

Examples:

Estou falando no telefone. Pode baixar esse som? (Br)

I'm speaking on the phone. Can you turn that noise down?

Mariana estava a ler o jornal quando alguém bateu à porta. (Pt)

Mariana was reading the newspaper when someone knocked on the door.

5.8.2 The progressive tenses

The progressive tenses are formed by *ir* + infinitive and are the equivalents of the English “to be going” + infinitive. These are the equivalents of the future simple and the future in the past. This form tends to replace the simple future in spoken discourse.

Example:

Eu ia sair quando o telefone tocou.

I was going to leave when the phone rang.

5.8.3 Acabar de

Acabar de means “(to have) just” and expresses the idea that an action has recently been completed.

Example:

Acabo de chegar.

I (have) just arrived.

5.9 *Ser, estar, and ficar*

Ser, estar, and ficar are all equivalents of “to be” but each expresses different aspects.

5.9.1 Location

Estar is used to express temporary locations. *Ficar* may also be used to express the idea of “to stay.”

Example:

Estou em casa neste momento.

I am at home at this moment.

Ser is used to express a permanent location, and is therefore used only in the case of geographic locations, buildings, etc. It is not used to express the location of moveable objects, animals, or people.

Example:

O Brasil é na América do Sul.

Brazil is in South America.

Ficar is also used to express permanent locations and can also mean “to stay.”

Examples:

Angola fica na África.

Angola is in Africa.

Eu fiquei em casa quando a minha família foi de férias.

I stayed home when my family went on vacation.

5.9.2 Description

Estar is used to express variable conditions, both physical and mental.

Examples:

Estou cansado

I am tired (now).

O doente que sofre de cancro está muito magro.

The cancer patient is very thin.

Ser is used to express permanent characteristics.

Examples:

A Luciana é uma pessoa feliz.

Luciana is a happy person (it is part of her personality).

O meu pai é muito magro. Come muito, mas nunca engorda.

My father is a very thin man. He eats a lot but never gains weight.

Ficar is used to express a change in condition or to mean “to become.”

Examples:

O céu ficou muito escuro de repente com a aproximação da trovoadá.

The sky suddenly became dark with the approaching storm.

O Patrício ficou muito contente com a notícia.

Patrick was very happy with the news.

5.9.3 Special uses of *ser*

Ser has several special uses in Portuguese, many of which require the preposition *de*.

1. Possession
Este disco é do Marcos.
This cd is Mark's.

2. Origin
Ela é de Bissau.
She is from Bissau.

3. Composition
Só gosto de camisas de algodão.
I only like cotton shirts.
Esta cadeira é de plástico e metal.
This chair is made of metal and plastic.

4. Time
Ser is used to show clock time, seasons and times of the year, days, dates, holidays, etc.
Era Natal quando te conheci.
It was Christmas when I met you.
Será Verão quando acabar de ler *Os Maias*.
It will be summer when I finish *The Maias* (a famous, but lengthy, Portuguese novel by Eça de Queirós).
É uma da tarde.
It is one o'clock.

5. Nationality
Paulo é Moçambicano.
Paul is Mozambican.

6. Religion
Sou católica.
I am catholic.

7. Political affiliation
Ela costumava ser comunista.
She used to be a communist.

8. Impersonal expressions
When combining with impersonal expressions, *ser* is always conjugated in the third person singular.
É fabuloso que o governo apoie a cultura.
It is wonderful that the government supports culture.

5.9.4 Special uses of *estar*

The following expressions are made with *estar + com* followed by a noun. They may also be expressed by the verb *ter* which at times indicates a more lasting condition.

estar com fome (to be hungry)
estar com sede (to be thirsty)
estar com frio (to be cold)
estar com calor (to be hot)
estar com saudades (to miss somebody or something)
estar com dores (to have a pain)

5.10 *Saber and conhecer*

Saber and *conhecer* are both equivalents of the English “to know.” *Conhecer* generally expresses familiarity with an object, concept, or person, while *saber* expresses memorized knowledge or combines with the infinitive to mean “to know how to do something.”

Examples with *conhecer*:

Conheço as obras de Jorge Amado.

I know (am familiar with) the works of Jorge Amado (a well-known Brazilian author).

O meu primo conhece a Marta.

My cousin knows Marta.

Note: With geographic locations, *conhecer* also expresses the fact that someone has visited the place.

Example:

Conhecem Brasília?

Do you know Brasília?

Examples with *saber*:

Quando era criança, tinha que saber a tabuada de cor.

When I was child, I had to know my multiplication tables by heart.

Ele é a(c)tor e por isso sabe de certo *Hamlet*.

He is an actor, so he certainly knows *Hamlet* (has it memorized).

Sei nadar.

I know how to swim; I can swim.

Note: there are two special constructions with *saber*:

Saber de means to “know of” or “to find out about” something; *saber que* means “to know that.”

Examples:

Souberam do terremoto na China?

Did you hear about the earthquake in China?

Sei que me estás a mentir. (Pt)

I know that you’re lying to me.

5.11 Modal verbs

Modal verbs are those which combine with another verb in the infinitive form in order to express intentions or opinions. In English, some examples are “can,” “should,” “might,” and “must.” The chief difference between English and Portuguese auxiliaries is that in Portuguese, the auxiliaries can normally be conjugated in all tenses, while in English they cannot.

The following are modal verbs in Portuguese: *há que*, *dever*, *ter que/de*, and *poder*.

Há que is an impersonal expression which corresponds to the idea of “one must.” It expresses obligation or urgency with consequences if not obeyed. The agent making the demand is not expressed or necessary and may be supposed to be “The powers that be.”

Example:

Há que entregar as requisições a tempo se queremos ter os livros no início do ano.

We must (it is absolutely necessary to) turn in the requests on time if we want the books by the beginning of the year.

Dever is a conjugated verb which corresponds to “should.” It expresses an opinion with an inherent suggestion. It does not, however, express a command.

Examples:

Você deve ir ao médico.

You should go to the doctor (but you are not forced or obliged to).

In the imperfect, *dever* conveys a weaker sense than in the present indicative, unless the imperfect is part of a reported speech structure.

Example:

Meu irmão disse que eu devia investir mais dinheiro na minha conta de reforma. (Pt)

My brother told me that I should invest more money in my retirement plan.

Ter que (also *ter de*) corresponds to “have to” and indicates obligation but is more personal.

Examples:

Tenho que me ir embora às cinco horas sem falta.

I have to leave at 5 without fail.

A minha mãe disse-me que eu tinha de limpar o meu quarto este fim de semana.

My mother told me that I had to clean my room this weekend.

Poder corresponds to “can” or “could” and indicates a possible act on the part of the agent.

Example:

Você pode ir comigo às compras amanhã?

Can (could) you come shopping with me tomorrow?

Pode ser que/podia ser que is an impersonal expression that corresponds to “might” and indicate a possibility but with less certainty than *poder* by itself.

Example:

Pode ser que o avião chegue atrasado por causa da tempestade.

The plane might arrive late, due to the storm.

5.12 Passive voice

Portuguese has two ways of expressing the passive voice, one which is similar to the English use of “to be + participle + agent + by” and the other which employs the passive *se*.

Ser + participle + *por* + agent

The passive voice with *ser* is not as commonly used as its English counterpart. It is normally used only in simple tenses (present, preterit and, less commonly, future) and is generally used when the agent is explicitly mentioned. In this case the participle must agree with the subject of the sentence (which is the receiver or result of the action done).

Examples:

O poema *Os Lusíadas* foi escrito por Camões.

The poem *The Lusiads* was written by Camoens.

Dois cidades foram destruídas por um vulcão.

Two cities were destroyed by a volcano.

Os participantes serão apresentados pelo Presidente.

The participants will be presented by the President.

Passive *se*

The passive with *se* (*pronome apassivante*) is the more commonly used of the two passive forms. It can be used with any tense but, when used, the agent (or doer) must be implied and not given explicitly in the sentence: if it is, the active voice must be used. The verb is conjugated in the third person singular or plural to agree with the receiver of the

action. This construction can also be used as the equivalent of the indefinite impersonal subjects “you,” “one,” or “they” in English.

Examples:

Durante a guerra destruiu-se muita propriedade.

During the war, a great deal of property was destroyed.

Vende-se livros baratos naquela livraria (or Vendem-se livros . . .).

They sell inexpensive books in that store.

Fala-se português em cinco países da África.

Portuguese is spoken in five countries in Africa.

Desculpe, não se pode fumar no autocarro. (Pt)

Excuse me, you cannot smoke on the bus.

6 Reported speech

6.1 Direct reported speech

Direct reported speech receives the same punctuation as in English and is separated from the rest of the sentence by a comma and quotation marks. In Portuguese, other punctuation marks are not left inside the quotation marks.

Maria disse, “Estou muito zangada contigo”.
Maria said, “I am very angry at you.”

6.2 Indirect reported speech

In cases where quoted discourse is incorporated into the sentence, any agreements between the quoted material and other introductory text must be respected.

Indirect discourse is usually introduced by the following expressions:

Statements:	dizer que (to say that) declarar que (to declare that) explicar que (to explain that) esclarecer que (to clarify that) insinuar que (to insinuate that) responder que (to answer that) exclamar que (to exclaim that) negar que (to deny that)
Questions:	perguntar se (to ask if) tentar saber se/quando/como/por que (to try to find out + any interrogative word)

If the reporting verb is in the present, then all verb tenses remain the same. If the reporting verb is in the past, then all reported speech must shift tense accordingly.

Present Tense “Vou ao cinema.” I am going to the movies.	Imperfect Ele disse que ia ao cinema. He said that he was going to the movies.
Imperfect “Ia ao cinema.” I was going to the movies.	Imperfect Ele disse que ia ao cinema. He said that he was going to the movies.
Preterit “Fui . . .” I went . . .	Pluperfect Ele disse que tinha ido ao cinema. He said that he had gone to the movies.
Future “Irei . . .” I will go . . .	Conditional Ele disse que iria . . . He said that he would go . . .
Future Subjunctive “Quando eu for . . .” When I go . . .	Imperfect subjunctive Ele disse que quando fosse . . . He said that when he would go . . .
Present subjunctive “Talvez vá . . .” Maybe I will go . . .	Imperfect subjunctive Ele disse que talvez fosse . . . He said that he might go . . .
Imperative “Volta depressa, Helena!” Come back soon, Helen!	Imperfect subjunctive Ele disse a Helena que voltasse depressa. Note: The following form may also be used: <i>para</i> + personal inf. Ele disse a Elena para voltar depressa.

The following adverbial expressions of time and location must also be modified in reported speech:

“Fico aqui .” “I am staying here .”	Disse que ficava ali/naquele lugar . He said that he was staying there/in that place .
“Fico ali .” “I am staying there .”	Disse que ficava ali . He said that he was staying there .

“Vou agora.” “I am going now.”	Disse que ia naquele momento . He said that he was going at that moment .
“Vou hoje.” “I am going today.”	Disse que ia naquele dia . He said that was going that day .
“Vou amanhã.” “I am going tomorrow.”	Disse que ia no dia seguinte . He said that he was going the next day .
“Vou depois de amanhã.” “I am going the day after tomorrow.”	Disse que ia daí a dois dias . He said that he was going two days later .
“Vou no próximo mês.” I am going next month.	Disse que ia no mês seguinte . He said that he was going the next month .

7 Pronouns and articles

7.1 Articles

Articles in Portuguese agree with the nouns they modify in the same manner as adjectives.

7.1.1 Indefinite article

The indefinite article corresponds to the English “a, an.” The plural forms express the idea of “some” and are often omitted when their meaning can easily be implied. The forms are the following:

uma – f sg	um – m sg
umas – f pl	uns – m pl

Examples:

Tenho uma irmã.

I have a sister.

Comprei uns sapatos novos.

I bought some new shoes.

Note: The indefinite article may be omitted before the word *outro* (other), unlike in English when it combines as “another.”

Comprei uma camisa de que gosto muito e por isso comprei outra hoje.

I bought a shirt that I liked a lot so today I bought **another**.

7.1.2 Definite article

The definite article corresponds to the English “the.” Its forms are the following:

a – f sg	o – m sg
as – f pl	os – m pl

The definite article creates a contraction with the following words:

de (of, from)	do, da, dos, das
a (to, at)	ao, à, aos, às
em (in, on)	no, na, nos, nas
por (for, by)	pelo, pela, pelos, pelas
aquele (that – adjective)	àquele, àquela, àqueles, àquelas
aquilo (that – pronoun)	àquilo

The definite article has several uses which are specialized in Portuguese:

1. It is used to emphasize a noun that is part of a phrase showing possession.

Example:

Este é o livro do estudante.

This is the student's book [as opposed to another book].

2. In Portugal and Africa, the definite article is used before possessive adjectives. It is used before the possessive pronoun in all variants of Portuguese.

Examples:

O meu nome é Josué.

My name is Joshua.

Tenho as minhas chaves. Tens as tuas?

I have my keys. Do you have yours?

3. In Portugal and Africa, but not always in Brazil, the definite article is used before people's names when they are not being addressed directly.

Examples:

O Carlos chegou atrasado.

Carlos arrived late.

A Penélope é muito inteligente.

Penelope is very intelligent.

Note: The article is not used before the name of famous writers as a sign of respect.

4. The definite article is used before the following geographical names:

-
- Countries, except for Portugal, Cuba, Israel, and the African Lusophone countries, with the exception of Guinea-Bissau.

Fui ao Japão e depois visitei Moçambique.

I went to Japan and then I visited Mozambique.

- Oceans, rivers, lakes, mountains, continents and islands, and the points of the compass (north, south, east, west).

O rio Mississippi fica na América do Norte.

The Mississippi River is in North America.

- Parks.

Fomos ao Parque Chico Mendes quando estivemos no Brasil.

We went to Chico Mendes park when we were in Brazil.

5. The definite article is used when a group in its totality, or a general concept, are presented at the beginning of a sentence. The article is omitted if the noun is not at the beginning.

Examples:

O amor é belo.

Love is beautiful.

Os cães ladram muito. (Pt)

Dogs bark a lot.

A penicilina é um medicamento importante.

Penicillin is an important medicine.

Não gosto de carne de vaca.

I don't like beef.

6. The definite article is used before the names of diseases.

Example:

A tuberculose matou muita gente durante o século XIX.

Tuberculosis killed many people during the nineteenth century.

7.2 Pronouns

In Portuguese, as in English, pronouns are used to substitute for a noun or noun phrase. Here they will be discussed according to their syntactic function within the sentence.

7.2.1 Subject pronouns

Subject pronouns in Portuguese are stressed. They generally precede a verb and may stand alone in spoken discourse. They may be omitted before any verb unless they are needed to clarify the subject of the verb.

The subject pronouns are the following:

1 st person sg	eu – I
2 nd person sg	Equivalents of “you” Informal: tu (mostly used in Portugal and Lusophone Africa), but also in a few areas of Brazil, although not always followed by the corresponding verb forms: <i>tu vai</i> “you go.” você (is used in informal address in Brazil) Formal: você (in Portugal and Lusophone Africa)
3 rd person sg	ele – he; ela – she <i>Note:</i> The subject pronoun “it” is not used in Portuguese. Instead the subject may be omitted or replaced by <i>ele</i> or <i>ela</i> .
1 st person pl	nós – we
2 nd person pl	vocês – you
3 rd person pl	eles – they (masculine); elas (feminine)

For more on the differences in the use of *você* in Portugal and Brazil, see Section 3.5.

7.2.2 Object pronouns

There are two basic groups of object pronouns, those that combine with verbs, and those which follow prepositions.

- Pronouns combining with prepositions are stressed and only combine with other words in the cases marked below.

1 st person sg – me	mim
2 nd person sg – you	ti você
3 rd person sg – him, her	ele ela
1 st person pl – us	nós
2 nd person pl – you	vocês
3 rd person pl – them	eles elas

These pronouns follow their prepositions.

Example:

Isto é para ti.

This is for you.

Note: Pronouns following the preposition *com* (with) form:

Com +

mim	comigo
ti	contigo
você	consigo (Pt, formal register)
ele	com ele
ela	com ela
nós	connosco (Pt); conosco (Br)
vocês	com vocês
eles	com eles
elas	com elas

Unstressed (clitic) pronouns

The unstressed pronouns combine with verbs and are usually not separated from their verb by any other grammatical structure. When two pronouns (the direct and indirect) are used together, they may combine to form one word. This combination, however, is rarely used in Brazil, where usually only one of the pronouns is used at a time.

Direct and indirect object pronouns

	Indirect	Direct
1 st person singular – me	me	me
2 nd person singular – you	te (informal) lhe (formal)	te (informal) o, a (formal)
3 rd person singular – him, her, it	lhe	o, a ele, ela (Br)
1 st person pl – us	nos	nos
2 nd person pl – you	vos (informal) (Pt) lhes (formal)	vos (informal) (Pt) os, as (formal) vocês (informal) (Br)
3 rd person pl – them	lhes	os, as eles, elas (Br)

These forms can combine (although such combinations are rarely heard in Brazil) to form contractions. The contractions are formed by

combining the indirect object pronouns *me, te, lhe, nos, vos,* and *lhes* with the third person pronouns *o, a, os, as*. The combinations are:

mo, ma, mos, mas
 to, ta, tos, tas
 lho, lha, lhos, lhas
 no-lo, no-la, no-los, no-las
 vo-lo, vo-la, vo-los, vo-las
 lho, lha, lhos, lhas

Examples:

O Paulo deu as chaves a mim. > **O Paulo deu-mas.** (Pt)

Paul gave the keys to me. > He gave them to me.

Luísa fez um favor para a Patrícia. > **Luísa o fez para a Patrícia.** (Br)

Luisa did a favor for Patricia. > Luisa did it for Patricia.

Deram a chave a nós. > **No-la deram.** (or *Deram-no-la*) (Pt)

They gave the key to us. > They gave it to us.

- Pronoun–verb placement: pronouns preceding the verb

In European and African variants of Portuguese, the clitic usually follows the verb in all cases except the following:

1. after adverbs such as: *ainda, aqui, assim, bastante, bem, já, não, nem, pouco, também, nada, ninguém, nenhum,* etc.

Examples:

Ainda não me foi possível ir a Bissau este ano.

I haven't been able to go to Bissau this year.

2. after interrogative and relative pronouns such as: *como, onde, por que, porque, quando, quanto, que, quem.*

Examples:

—**Por que não me disseste isso antes?**

Why didn't you tell me that earlier?

—**Porque não me lembrei.**

Because I didn't remember.

3. after *para*

Example:

Para te dizer a verdade, estou muito cansado.

To tell you the truth, I am very tired.

- Pronoun–verb placement: pronouns following the verb

When clitic pronouns follow a verb, they are normally connected with a hyphen.

Example:

Telefona-me. (Pt)

Call me.

In the following cases, however, special forms are required, especially in Portugal and Lusophone Africa.

<p>Infinitives with <i>o, a, os, as</i></p>	<p>The final <i>-r</i> of the infinitive is omitted and an initial <i>l-</i> is added to the clitic. The <i>-a</i> of the infinitive is written with the <i>acento agudo</i> (<i>á</i>) and <i>-e</i> and <i>-o</i> with the circumflex accent (<i>-ê, -ô</i>).</p>
	<p>Examples: Não quero convidá-lo. I don't want to invite him. Não quis vê-la. I didn't want to see her.</p>
<p>Future and conditional forms</p>	<p>The clitic, except in Brazilian Portuguese, may be inserted between the verb root and ending. Example: Ter-te-ia ligado, com certeza. I would have called you, certainly. Also, <i>veria + a + haver > vê-la-ia</i> or <i>haveria de vê-la</i> (I would see her).</p>
<p>Verb forms ending in <i>-m</i> or <i>-ão</i></p>	<p>When combining with these forms, an initial <i>n-</i> is added to <i>o, a, os, as</i>. Examples: Compraram-nas. They bought them (to avoid any confusion when pronouncing “conpraram + as” as “conpraram mas,” they bought them [for] me). Dão-nos aos filhos. They give them to their children (to avoid the hiatus “dão-os”).</p>
<p>Verb forms ending in <i>-s</i> or <i>-z</i></p>	<p>When combining with these forms, an initial <i>l-</i> is added to <i>o, a, os, as</i>. Example: Comprámo-lo ontem. We bought it yesterday.</p>

7.2.3 Reflexive pronouns

The reflexive pronouns are used with reflexive verbs and also if the subject and object of the verb are the same entity. Their placement is the same as that for all other unstressed (clitic) pronouns.

The forms of the reflexive pronouns are the following:

1 st person singular – me	me
2 nd person singular – you	te (informal) se (formal)
3 rd person singular – him, her	se
1 st person pl – us	nos
2 nd person pl – you	se
3 rd person pl – them	se

Examples:

Eu penteio-me.

I brush my hair.

Eles se amam muito.

They love each other very much.

The following verbs normally require the reflexive construction:

beneficiar-se (Br)	to reap the benefits from
chamar-se	to be called/named
deitar-se	to go to bed
demorar-se	to take longer
divertir-se	to have fun
lavar-se	to take a bath or shower
levantar-se	to get up
machucar-se (Br)	to hurt oneself (Br)
magoar-se (Pt)	to hurt oneself
olhar-se	to look at oneself in the mirror
pentear-se	to brush one's hair
reunir-se	to get together
sentar-se	to sit down
sentir-se	to feel
vestir-se	to get dressed

The following verbs exist only as reflexive constructions:

apiedar-se de	to feel pity for
condoer-se de	to feel pity for
queixar-se de	to complain about
suicidar-se	to commit suicide

7.2.4 Interrogative pronouns

These are included in Section 10 (Interrogatives).

7.2.5 Relative pronouns

Relative pronouns connect clauses, preventing repetition and redundancy.

The following relative pronouns are invariable and are used as in English:

que (what)

quem (who, whom)

onde (where)

Examples:

O homem que estava na rua, te procurava.

The man that was in the street was looking for you.

Os livros que pediram estão na biblioteca.

The books that they asked for are in the library.

The following relative pronouns agree with the noun that they represent in both gender and number. These are used in more formal registers of Portuguese and in written discourse:

o qual (which) (m)

a qual (which) (f)

cujo (whose) (m)

cuja (whose) (f)

Examples:

Aquelas mulheres, as quais estavam a falar da greve, acabaram por não participar nela. (Pt)

Those women, who (those which) were speaking about the strike, did not participate in the end.

Aquele senhor, cujos filhos estudam com o meu, é meu vizinho.

That man, whose sons study with mine, is my neighbor.

7.2.6 Demonstrative pronouns and adjectives

Demonstrative pronouns and adjectives share the same forms, except that the noun is omitted in the case of the pronouns. They agree in gender and number with the noun that they modify or represent. The plural forms are made by adding a final *-s*.

Equivalents of “this”/“these”:

Masculine	Feminine
este	esta
estes	estas

There are two equivalents of “that”/“those.” *Esse* is for objects relatively far from the speaker but near the person addressed, and *aquele* is for objects distant from both.

Masculine	Feminine
esse	essa
esses	essas
aquele	aquela
aqueles	aquelas

There is also a neuter pronoun for each of the above distinctions in distance from the speaker: *isto*, *isso*, *aquilo*.

Examples:

Este restaurante é melhor do que aquele ali.

This restaurant is better than that one over there.

Isto é muito importante para vocês.

This is very important for you.

Note: In Brazil, *isso/essa/esse* are often used instead of *isto/esta/este*, without implying greater distance between the object and the speaker.

7.2.7 Indefinite pronouns and adjectives

Indefinite pronouns may function as either a subject or an object. The rules for pluralization, and masculine and feminine forms, are the same as those for nouns, except for *qualquer*, whose gender is invariable and whose plural is *qualsquer*. All negative pronouns are invariable for number.

algum	some
certo	certain
muito	a lot, many, much
nenhum	nothing, none
outro	another, other
pouco	a little, few
tanto	as much, as many
vário	various, several
todo	all

Examples:

Não tenho tanto dinheiro como gostaria.

I don't have as much money as I would like.

Sei de algumas pessoas que falam várias línguas africanas, mas não conheço nenhuma.

I know of some people who can speak several African languages, but I don't know any.

The following pronouns, which generally function as true pronouns (are not followed by any noun), are invariable:

algo	certain, something
alguém	somebody
cada	a little, few
nada	a lot, many, much
ninguém	nobody
outrem	other
tudo	nothing, none

Examples:

O advogado disse que o seu cliente não tinha mais nada a declarar, que já tinha dito tudo o que havia a dizer aos jornalistas.

The lawyer said that his client had no more comments, that he had already said everything to the journalists.

7.2.8 Possessive pronouns and adjectives

The rules for use and formation of the possessive pronouns are explained in Section 4.4.3.

8 Adverbs

Adverbs fall into several categories. Depending on their type, they may either follow or precede the verb that they modify. Adverbs are invariable and do not agree in either gender or number with the subjects of their verbs.

8.1 Adverbs of manner formed from adjectives

Adverbs of manner have adjectives as their roots. They are formed from the feminine singular form of the adjective root and describe the manner in which the action is performed. To the root, the ending *-mente* is added which corresponds to the English “-ly.” Adverbs of manner generally follow the verb.

Examples:

falsa (false) – falsamente (falsely)

teimosa (stubborn) – teimosamente (stubbornly)

O golfinho nadou rapidamente com a sua cria.

The dolphin swam rapidly with her calf.

Note: In the case of adjectives whose feminine forms do not end in *-a* (for formation of feminines, see Section 4.1), simply add *-mente*.

Examples:

veloz (quick)-velozmente (quickly)

alegre (happy)-alegremente (happily)

8.2 Adverbs of time, place, quantity, and manner with autonomous forms

These adverbs of time, place, quantity, and manner generally follow the verb they modify. Any adverb which may precede a verb is marked with a dagger (†).

8.2.1 Adverbs of time

agora [†]	now
amanhã [†]	tomorrow
anteontem [†]	the day before yesterday
cedo	early
depois [†]	afterwards, after
hoje [†]	today, nowadays
já [†]	already
logo	later, soon
nunca [†]	never
ontem [†]	yesterday
sempre [†]	always (In Brazilian Portuguese, <i>sempre</i> usually precedes the verb)
tarde	late

Examples:

Já comi.

I already ate/I have already eaten.

Chegaram ontem.

They arrived yesterday.

Os convidados chegam amanhã no avião das 11.

The guests arrive tomorrow on the 11 o'clock plane.

8.2.2 Adverbs of place

ai [†]	there (next to the person addressed)
ali [†]	there (far from the speaker and addressee)
aqui [†]	here
lá [†] , acolá (Pt)	(over) there

Example:

Quando chegarem lá, vão ter uma surpresa.

When you arrive there, you will have a surprise.

8.2.3 Adverbs of manner

assim	so, this way, then
bem	well
depressa	quickly
devagar	slowly
mal	poorly, badly
só, sozinho	alone

Examples:

O pobre homem ficou só depois da morte de sua mulher.

The poor man was alone after the death of his wife.

É importante dirigir devagar na neve.

It is important to drive slowly in the snow.

8.2.4 Adverbs of quantity

bastante	very
demais	too much
demasiado	too much
mais	more
menos	less
muito [†]	very
pouco	little
quase [†]	almost

Examples:

Nadei muito na praia.

I swam a lot at the beach.

Quase caí ao atravessar a rua.

I almost fell crossing the street.

8.3 Adverbs of affirmation and negation

Adverbs of affirmation always precede the verb they modify and the verb may be omitted.

assim	assim, mais	so-so
	ou menos	
certamente		certainly, surely
efe(c)tivamente		really, as a matter of fact
realmente		really
sempre		always
sim		yes
também		also

Examples:

Você vem conosco à festa na sexta-feira? Sim!

Are you coming with us to the party on Friday? Yes!

Telefone-te ou passo por aí. (Pt)

I will either call you or stop by.

Adverbs of negation also precede the verb that is modified and can also stand alone in spoken discourse.

de forma alguma	under no circumstances
de forma nenhuma/de nenhuma forma	under no circumstances
de modo nenhum/de nenhum modo	under no circumstances
não	no, not
nem	neither, nor
nunca	never
também não	neither

Examples:

Não, nunca iria com você de forma nenhuma!

No, I wouldn't go with you under any circumstances!

Não sei, nem me interessa.

No, I don't know, nor am I interested.

9 Comparatives and superlatives

9.1 Comparatives of inequality

9.1.1 Comparing qualities

In order to form comparatives of inequality in Portuguese, neither the adjectives nor adverbs are modified. Adjectives must always agree with the first item being compared in both number and gender. The following construction is utilized:

1st item + verb + *mais* (more) or *menos* (less) + adjective or adverb
+ *do que* + 2nd item

Examples:

Eu sou mais alto do que você.

I am taller than you.

Hoje em dia as pessoas são mais felizes do que antigamente.

Nowadays people are happier than before.

The same construction with *menos do que* is used to express “less than.”

Example:

Um rato é menos inteligente do que um chimpanzé.

A rat is less intelligent than a chimpanzee.

Note: The word *do* may be, and often is, omitted in comparative constructions, both in spoken and written discourse.

9.1.2 Comparing quantities

The following construction is used when comparing quantities of nouns:

1st item + verb + *mais* or *menos* + noun + *do que* + 2nd item

In order to form comparatives of inequality, the forms *mais (do) que* and *menos (do) que* are used to denote “more than” or “less than.”

Example:

Estudo mais horas do que tu, or Estudo mais horas que tu.

I study more hours than you.

Example:

Ele tem mais amigos do que seu irmão.

He has more friends than his brother.

9.1.3 Special comparative (and superlative) adjectives and adverbs

The following adjectives and adverbs are used in place of the structures with *mais* and *menos*:

melhor (better/best)

pior (worse/worst)

menor (smaller/smallest)

maior (bigger/biggest)

Example:

Ayrton Senna era melhor piloto de Fórmula 1 que muitos outros mais conhecidos.

Ayrton Senna was a better Formula 1 driver than many other, better-known ones.

9.2 Comparisons of equality

The English “as-as” construction is expressed with *tão* or *tanto como*.

9.2.1 Quality

In order to convey that two items share the same quality, the following construction is utilized (in the case of comparisons of adjectives, the adjective agrees in number and gender with the first item, while adverbs are invariable):

1st item + verb + *tão* + adjective or adverb + *como* (or *quanto*)
+ 2nd item

Examples:

O meu carro é tão potente como o do Carlos.

My car is as fast as Carl's.

O Jorge mente tão descaradamente como a Catarina.

George lies as openly as Catherine.

In spoken discourse and informal circumstances, the comparative structure may be reduced to “que nem”: **Rogério é teimoso que nem (um) jericó** (Roger is stubborn as a mule).

9.2.2 Quantity

In order to form comparatives of equality, the form *tanto/a/os/as* is used to signify “as much as” or “as many as.”

Example:

Não falo tanto como tu.

I don't speak as much as you (do).

The following construction is used when comparing quantities of nouns:

1st item + verb + *tanto/a/os/as* + noun + *do que* + 2nd item

Example:

Isabel tem tantos sapatos como Imelda Marcos.

Isabel has as many shoes as Imelda Marcos.

Note: When modifying nouns, *tanto* is used and its inflected forms agree with the nouns shared by both items.

9.3 Superlatives

The superlative (*grau superlativo*) in Portuguese expresses the idea of maximum superiority or inferiority compared to the other members of a group, or the group in its totality. In English, this is expressed generally with “the most/least + modifier or noun.” In Portuguese the corresponding structures are the following:

9.3.1 The superlative with adjectives

Verb + definite article (or definite article + noun) + *mais/menos* + adjective

Examples:

O meu pai é o mais alto da família.

My father is the tallest in the family.

O Pedro e a Flora são os alunos mais aplicados da turma.

Peter and Flora are the most diligent students in the class.

O Pedro é o mais competente.

Peter is the most competent.

Note: While in English the preposition “in” precedes the group of comparison, in Portuguese *de* is used. The group can be omitted, as in English.

9.3.2 The superlative with adverbs and nouns

In Portuguese, an anaphoric or repetitive construction is used to express the superlative with nouns or adverbs. The structure is the following:

subject + *ser* + relative pronoun + verb + *mais/menos* + adverb or noun

Note: in the slot reserved for the relative pronoun, the following items may be inserted:

o/a/os/as + implied noun + *que*

o que, a que, os que, as que

quem

Examples:

Roberto é quem corre mais depressa de toda a equipe.

Robert is the one who runs the fastest in the whole team (Robert runs the fastest).

Pelé é o futebolista que ganhou mais fama no mundo.

Pele is the soccer player who gained the most fame in the world (Pele is the most famous soccer player in the world).

9.3.3 The superlative with verbs

A similar anaphoric structure is used to express the superlative with verbs:

subject + *ser* + relative pronoun + verb + *mais/menos*

With this structure, any adverbial phrases may precede the verb, and with them the adverbs *mais/menos*.

Examples:

Camilo Castelo Branco é o romancista que mais escreveu no século XIX em Portugal.

or

Camilo Castelo Branco é o romancista que escreveu mais no século XIX em Portugal.

Camilo Castelo Branco is the novelist who wrote the most in the nineteenth century in Portugal.

10 Interrogatives

10.1 Yes/no questions

Yes/no questions are expressed with a rise in intonation in Portuguese and do not require any special structure. There is no subject-verb inversion or auxiliary required, as in English.

Example:

Tem tempo para um cafezinho?

Do you have time for a coffee?

10.2 Wh-words or question words

Questions in Portuguese are formed with the question word preceding the verb. Again, there is no subject-verb inversion or auxiliary verb required.

Example:

Quantos anos você tem?

How old are you?

When the verb used takes a preposition, that preposition will be the first word in the phrase.

Example:

A que horas chegaram?

At what time did you arrive?

Interrogative words and phrases

preposition + **que** + to which
 noun

como how

de onde from where

onde	where
o que	what
para onde	to where
por que	why
Porquê? (Pt)/Por quê? (Br)	Why? (this is used as a sentence in itself)
quando	when
quanto/a	how much
quantos/as	how many
quem	who, whom
qual/quais	which

11 Fields of meaning – vocabulary extension

This section presents vocabulary from a number of semantic fields. The words chosen here are ones in which Portuguese vocabulary presents a large number of synonyms with slightly different uses, as well as vocabulary areas in which English and Portuguese may have either major differences or nuances. The information is presented in list form: the most general Portuguese word at the top of the diagram with progression to the most specific. The material here may be accessed either via the English title of each diagram (arranged alphabetically) or via the individual Portuguese words, all of which are listed in the Portuguese word index at the end of the book.

The symbol + indicates a cover term or most general word which fits most uses.

To agree

+ **estar de acordo**

+ **concordar com alguém**

pôr-se de acordo

to agree in general with someone

concordar [em género e número]

to agree (in gender and number, i.e. grammatical agreement)

aceder a fazer alguma coisa

concordar em fazer alguma coisa

to agree to do something

consentir em

aceitar

to accept to do something, to agree to do something (not necessarily by choice)

To annoy

+ **aborrecer**

chatear (R1)

to annoy, to bother

enfadar-se

to become annoyed

+ **enfadar**
entediar
 to annoy, to bother
molestar (R3)
 to annoy, to hurt

Anger

Adjectives + **zangado**
furioso
furibundo
enraivecido
 furious, enraged
estar pior que um urso/pirurso (R1) (Pt)
 to be as mad or grumpy as a bear

Verbs + **zangar-se**
ficar zangado
 to become/be angry
alterar-se (R3)
 to become annoyed (showing one's anger)
encolerizar-se
exasperar (-se)
irar (-se)
 to become furious or upset

Appearance

Nouns + **aparência**
aspecto
ar
 general appearance
semblante (R3)
cara (Pt)/rosto (Br)
 facial appearance

Verbs + **aparentar**
 to appear
parecer
 to seem
entrar
aparecer
comparecer
mostrar-se
 mostrar a cara
pôr o nariz de fora (R1)
 to make an appearance

Approval

Adjectives	<p>fabuloso fabulous</p> <p>estupendo stupendous</p> <p>fantástico fantastic</p> <p>incrível incredible</p> <p>excelente excellent</p> <p>admirável admirable</p> <p>+ ó(p)timo</p> <p>tremendo great</p> <p>The following expressions are all R1: porreiro (Pt) legal (Br) jóia (Br) beleza (Br) fixe (Pt) great or cool in US English</p>
Verbs	<p>+ aprovar to approve</p> <p>dar “luz verde” (R1) to give the green light / to give the go ahead</p> <p>dar “carta branca” (R1) give the OK</p> <p>passar (uma proposta/de ano) to pass</p> <p>ratificar to ratify</p>
Nouns	<p>+ aprovação approval</p> <p>autorização authorization</p> <p>ratificação ratification</p>

To ask

+ **perguntar**
fazer uma pergunta
to ask a question
perguntar por alguém
to ask for someone
+ **pedir**
solicitar (R3)
to ask for (something)
suplicar
rogar (R3)
to beg for
exigir
demandar (R3)
to demand
requerer (R3)
to require, to request

Back

Nouns

+ **as costas**
(of a person, of a chair)
dorso
(of an animal)
lombada
(of a book)
+ **armazém ou depósito**
+ **fundos (Br)**
(of a store)

Prepositions

+ **atrás**
por detrás
at the back of, behind
na parte de trás (Pt)
in/at the back (of a house, etc.)

Verbs

+ **regressar**
voltar
estar de volta
to go/come back, to return
devolver
to return something
apoiar alguém ou uma proposta
to back up someone or something
fazer marcha atrás
to back (up) (a car)

voltar as costas

to turn one's back/ to abandon

telefonar, ligar de volta/ de novo

to call back

Ball+ **bola****esfera, globo**

sphere, globe

redondinha, esférico (Pt) (R1)

soccer ball, (commentator's slang)

novelo

ball (of yarn)

berlinde (Pt)/bola de gude (Br)

marble

divertir-se imenso (Pt)/curtir à beça (Br)

to have a ball (figurative)

Beautiful+ **bela****bonita****linda****atraente****gira (Pt) (R1)**

(for women)

+ **belo****atraente**

(for men)

The following are all R1 and can be used for men, women, or things:

jeitoso**um broto (Br)****lindinho (Br)****borrachinho (Pt)****um pão (Pt)****bonitinho****giro (Pt)****fofinho (Pt)****fofura****um bonequinho/uma bonequinha**

for children (cute)

magnífico**belíssimo****lindíssimo**

(of things such as works of art)

To become+ **transformar-se (em)** + noun**chegar a ser** + noun

to become something

fazer-se: presupposes an organic growth or evolution (of an individual night/day)

Example:

Ele fez-se um homem maduro muito rápido.

He became a mature man very quickly.

tornar-se: emphasizes the process of transformation.

Example:

São Paulo tornou-se um estado muito importante no início do século XX.

São Paulo became a very important state at the beginning of the twentieth century.

ficar: emphasizes the result of an evolution

Example:

Juliana ficou rica do dia para a noite com a herança do seu pai.

Juliana became rich overnight with her father's inheritance.

To begin, beginning

Nouns

+ **princípio****início****começo**

Verbs

+ **começar****iniciar****principiar**

to begin, to start

travar amizade

to begin a friendship

entabular (conversa, relações/sentimentos)

to begin a conversation, to begin a sentimental/amorous relationship (R3)

Verb plus infinitive

+ **começar a****começar por****dar início a****pôr-se a**

to begin + infinitive

Derivatives	o/a principiante beginner mestre de cerimónias (Pt)/cerimônias (Br) master of ceremonies (who starts an event)
-------------	---

<i>Boat</i>	+ barco barco a remos row boat barco a motor motor boat barco à vela sail boat, yacht barcaça barge bote lancha medium sized boat caravela small sailing ship (used in early modern Europe) navio ship transatlântico ocean liner
-------------	---

<i>Bottle</i>	+ garrafa garrafão five liter (one gallon) bottle garrafa térmica/termos thermos flask jarro pitcher cantil canteen botija [de água quente] (Pt) hot water bottle for warming up a bed frasco small plastic or glass bottle, flask biberon/ão (Pt) baby bottle engarrafamento bottleneck (e.g. causing traffic congestion)
---------------	--

Boy/Girl

Boy	+ bebé (Pt)/ bebê (Br) neném (Br) male baby menino (can also be “young man” in Brazil) moleque (Br) pivete (Pt) (R1) miúdo (Pt) (R1) kid puto (Pt; means “male prostitute” in Br) rapaz moço (also “man”) (regional use in Pt, but not in Br) young man
Girl	+ bebé /bebê neném (Br) bebézinha female baby menina child; young woman (Br) miúda (Pt) female child/kid rapariga (Pt; means “prostitute” in Br) moça (regional use in Pt, but not in Br) young woman

Brake

Nouns	+ freio (Br)/ travão (Pt)
Verbs	+ frear (Br)/ travar (Pt)

Brave

Adjectives	+ corajoso brave, courageous valente valiant, brave bravo brave and easily angered (Br) destemido (R3) fearless intrépido (R3) intrepid
------------	---

	audacioso, audaz arrojado audacious, daring
Verbs	+ ter coragem ser corajoso to be brave arriscar (-se) atrever-se to dare correr riscos to risk, run risks
Expression	<i>Admirável Mundo Novo</i> <i>Brave New World</i>
<i>To break</i>	+ partir quebrar (R3 in Pt, R2 in Br) fra(c)turar (R3; medical) to fracture desfazer despedaçar estilhaçar fazer em pedaços to break into pieces dar notícias em primeira mão to break the news (to someone) romper/acabar com alguém numa relação amorosa to break up with someone infringir a lei (R2/R3) to break the law romper/desrespeitar/furar (R1) um contrato to break a contract, agreement
<i>Buttocks/Backside</i>	
Nouns	+ traseiro nádegas assento rabo rear, bum cu (R1*) bunda (Br) (R1*) bundão (Br) (R1*) arse, ass

Expressions	estar pelado/em pelo to be naked/butt naked/stark (naked) rabo de cavalo ponytail beata cigarette butt cauda tail meter o rabo entre as pernas to show fear, admit defeat or give in (literally “to put one’s tail between one’s legs”) olhar pelo rabo do olho (R1) to see through the tail of one’s eye
-------------	---

Climb

Verbs	+ subir to climb (as in stairs, a road, a mountain) tregar to climb (including trees) fazer escalada to rock climb
Expressions and derivatives	trepadeira ivy or any other plant that climbs walls tregar pelas paredes to get very angry, to go up the wall

Coarse

+ **basto**
cerrado
espesso
rude
áspero
(for textures)
grosseiro
incivilizado
inculto
não cultivado
agreste
não polido
tosco
(for people)

Call

Nouns	<p>+ chamamento call (act of calling)</p> <p>+ chamada ligação (o) telefonema (Pt) apitadela (Pt) ligada (Br) telephone call</p> <p>convocatória (R3) call/invitation to appear before a formally constituted body or panel</p> <p>chamada de ordem (R3) call to order</p> <p>invocação (R3) call, invocation, apostrophe</p>
Verbs	<p>+ chamar to call (e.g. somebody's name)</p> <p>chamar-se to call oneself, be named</p> <p>ligar telefonar (Pt) chamar (Br) apitar (Pt) to call, phone</p> <p>convocar/marcar uma reunião to call a meeting</p> <p>chamar à ordem to call to order</p> <p>invocar (R3) to invoke</p> <p>mandar recolher recolher, retirar do mercado to recall (a defective product)</p>

Change

Nouns	<p>+ mudança alteração (R3) alteration, change</p> <p>transformação evolução progressão (gradual or progressive) change</p>
-------	--

	troca exchange
	troco change (small money)
Verbs	+ mudar to change (in quality); to move (house) alterar (R2) to change transformar to transform trocar dar em troca to exchange (for) cambiar to change currency mudar de vida emendar-se to change/improve one's lifestyle
Expression	um troca-tintas (Pt) someone who gets things muddled, misattributes quotes, etc.

Coat

Nouns	+ casaco paletó (para homem) (Br) coat (o) blaiser (Pt) coat, blazer sobretudo overcoat (o) impermeável waterproof coat, mac kispo (Pt) parka wind breaker bata white coat worn by doctor or scientist (o) bibe (Pt) coat worn at a private school in lieu of uniform
-------	--

	avental apron, smock
	camada coating, layer (e.g. paint)
Verbs	+ passar uma camada to coat (with paint or similar substance) impermeabilizar to waterproof
<hr/>	
<i>Competition</i>	
Nouns	+ competição concurso contest, competition (o/a) concorrente competitor
Adjectives	+ competitivo competitive (person, sport) concorrido hotly contested (a lot of people enter for the event) renhido close run (match, race)
Verbs	+ competir to compete concorrer to run (as a candidate); to apply for (a position or grant); to enter (something for a competition) jogar com/contra to compete/play against (e.g. another team)
<hr/>	
<i>Corner</i>	
Nouns	+ canto (inside) corner esquina outside or street corner quina corner of a piece of furniture recanto quiet corner (e.g. in city)
<hr/>	

Verb	+ enclausurar pôr contra a parede to corner, get someone with their back to the wall
Expression	o canto do olho the corner of the eye
<i>Count</i>	
Nouns	+ (a) contagem número numeração enumeração count, reckoning, enumeration
Verbs	+ contar to count numerar enumerar to number, enumerate
Expressions	contar com alguém to count on someone Quem conta acrescenta sempre um conto A person telling a story always adds something to it
<i>Crime/criminal</i>	
Nouns	+ (o) crime crime transgressão da lei infra(c)ção crime (in law), offence pecado sin, shame taxa de criminalidade crime rate criminoso criminal bandido bandit (o/a) fora-da-lei outlaw

	<p>(o/a) assaltante assailant, robber</p> <p>o ladrão/a ladra thief</p> <p>(o) escroque (R1) crook, swindler</p>
Adjectives	<hr/> <p>+ criminoso criminal (action)</p> <p>criminal criminal (system, court)</p> <hr/>
Verbs	<p>+ cometer um crime to commit a crime</p> <p>estar envolvido num crime to be involved in a crime</p> <p>transgredir (R3) infringir (tr) desrespeitar/não respeitar a lei to break the law</p> <p>roubar, assaltar to assault, rob (e.g. person, bank)</p> <p>pecar to sin</p> <hr/>
<i>To cut</i>	<p>+ cortar to cut</p> <p>partir to split, slice</p> <p>amputar to amputate</p> <p>podar to prune</p> <p>reduzir to cut down (reduce in size or quantity)</p> <p>dividir sec(c)ionar (R3) to cut into sections</p> <p>suprimir apagar to cut out, delete</p>

talhar
abater
 to cut down (e.g. tree), to carve (*talhar*)
truncar
 to cut short, truncate

To damage, spoil

+ **estragar**
 to damage

arruinar
danificar (R3)
 to ruin

maltratar
 to damage, mistreat

desintegrar
 to disintegrate

deteriorar (R3)
 to deteriorate

destruir
 to destroy

To deceive

Verbs

+ **enganar**
 to deceive

pregar uma partida a (R1)
 to play a joke on

defraudar
 to cheat/swindle

dissimular (R3)
 to dissimulate

seduzir
 to seduce

ser infiel a
 to be unfaithful to, cheat on

Expression

passar uma rasteira a
 to trip (somebody) up (figurative)

Defeat, win, beat

Nouns

+ **vitória**
 victory

+ **derrota**
 defeat

	conquista conquest
	trunfo triumph
	subjução subjugation
Verbs	+ vencer + derrotar (R2, R3) to vanquish, defeat
	conquistar to conquer, overcome
	trunfar sobre to triumph over (somebody, something)
	subjuar (R3) to subjugate, overcome, conquer
	+ ganhar to earn, win
	ganhar a uma pessoa num desporto (Pt)/ esporte (Br) to beat someone at a sport
	bater to beat (someone in a game)
Expression	bater alguém aos pontos to beat somebody by many points, beat them hands down

Destroy, destruction

Nouns	+ destruição destruction
	demolição demolition
	desmantelamento (R3) dismantling
	(o) derrube (R3 in Pt) knock-down
	desperdício desbarato wasting, laying waste
	despovoamento assolamento devastation

inutilização
(act of) rendering something useless

estragação
(act of) laying waste

destroços
(smashed) pieces, fragments

esmagamento
(act of) squashing, crushing

trituração
breaking into pieces

máquina britadora

britadeira
crusher

brita
gravel

aniquilamento
annihilation

ruína
ruin

Verbs

+ **destruir**

desfazer
to destroy

demolir
to demolish, pull down

desmantelar
to dismantle, take down

derrubar
deitar abaixo (R1)
to knock down, tear down

desbaratar
to waste

despovoar

devastar
to devastate, depopulate, lay waste

assolar (R3)
to raze

desfazer

inutilizar

estragar
to spoil, smash, render useless

destróçar

to smash to pieces (also used figuratively for strong emotions, heartbreak, “wrecking” by grief)

esmagar

to smash, squash, crush

triturar

to break into pieces

britar

to crush, shatter, break up (asphalt or cement)

calcar

to stamp on (and destroy)

aniquilar

to annihilate

arruinar

to ruin

Dirty

Nouns

+ **sujidade** (Pt)/**sujeira** (Br)

porcaria (R1)

(general noun applied to conditions of physical and moral filth)

(a) imundice (R3)

filth, foulness

pocilga (R1)

pigsty

porco

pig (also adj: filthy, disgusting) (R1)

Adjectives

+ **sujo**

dirty

insalubre (R3)

insalubrious

manchado

stained

imundo (R3)

filthy

lamacento

muddy

poeirento

dusty

tiznado

grimy; sun-tanned

impuro
impure

imoral
immoral

obsceno
obscene

em más condições de higiene
unhygienic

asqueroso
disgusting, revolting

merdento (R1)
disgusting

sórdido
sordid, filthy

pecaminhoso
(said of a situation conducive to
sinfulness; shameful)

Dispute

Nouns	<p>+ discussão contenda (R3) disputa altercação (R3) querela (R3) dispute, argument</p> <p>+ debate polêmica (Br)/polémica (Pt) debate</p> <p>desafio challenge</p> <p>luta peleja (R3) (physical) fight</p> <p>briga (Br) bulha (Pt) (R1) bate-boca (Br) (R1) berros (R1) noisy dispute</p>
Expressions	<p>chegar a vias de facto (Pt) (R1) andar aos murros (Pt) to come to blows</p> <p>meter a mão na cara (Br) to hit someone generally in the face</p>

<i>To dive</i>	+ mergulhar
	lançar-se
	to dive
	deitar-se a (água/mar/rio/lago)
	to dive (from a height into the water/sea/river/lake)
	submergir-se
	to submerge, to go down
	fazer/praticar mergulho
	to practice high-diving
	fazer mergulho
to scuba dive	
lançar-se a	
abalançar-se a	
to dive (into something) (a project, etc.)	
precipitar-se	
to rush or hasten (into something)	

<i>Drawing, sketch, design</i>	+ desenho
	esboço
	drawing, sketch
	contorno
	silhueta
	outline
	traçado
	layout (of streets, etc.)
	(o) diagrama
	(o) esquema
diagram	

<i>Edge</i>	+ beira
	+ bordo
	orla
	(of water, bank, shore)
	(o) limite
	limit
	(a) margem
	margin of a page
	aresta
	(of a cube)
fi	
bico	
ponta	
sharp edge or point of a knife, etc.	

	canto (of coin, book)
<hr/>	
<i>To enjoy oneself</i>	
<hr/>	
Verbs	+ divertir-se entreter-se distrair-se gozar (Pt) disfrutar to enjoy (something) gozar (Br) (R1*) to have sexual pleasure
<hr/>	
Expression	bon vivant (French borrowing)
<hr/>	
<i>Evildoer</i>	+ malfeitor malvado/a wicked person criminoso/a delinquente criminal arruaceiro hooligan canalha sem-vergonha swine pícaro (used to be R1, now R3) rogue malandro streetwise (Br), wicked (Pt) velhaco rascal, scoundrel
<hr/>	
<i>To examine</i>	+ examinar inspe(c)cionar to inspect perscrutar (R3) esquadrinhar (R3) fazer o escrutínio to court the votes

indagar (R3)
investigar
pesquisar
to investigate
apalpar o terreno (R1)
to test the waters

Face

Nouns

+ **cara (Pt)**
(used in all senses of “face” including figurative; also “heads” when tossing coin)
+ **rosto (Br)**
+ **semblante (R3)**
a face (R3)
aspecto
+ **superfície**
surface, face (e.g. of the earth)

Verbs

+ **estar em frente de**
estar defronte de (R3)
to be in front of
dar para
to face, overlook (a street etc.)
olhar para
encarar
to face (a person)
enfrentar
to look at, face up to (a person)
fazer frente a
to stand up to
confrontar
to confront
voltar a cara para
olhar para
encarar
to move or turn to face
dar a outra face
to give the other side

Fat (of people)

+ **gordo/a**
corpulento/a
robusto/a
thick, strong

obeso/a (R3)

obese

rechonchudo/a (R1)**gordalhufo/a (R1)****gordito/a (R1)****gordinho/a (R1)**

plump, chubby

fofo/a (Br)

tubby

pançudo (R1)**a pança (R1)**

(of belly)

*To find***+ encontrar****achar****descobrir**

to discover, to find out

dar com**tropeçar em****topar com (R1)****dar de caras com (Pt)**

to find unexpectedly, to run into

notar

to notice

reconhecer

to recognize

revelarto reveal, find out, reveal to others

Fire

Nouns

+ fogo**incêndio**

fire (which destroys property, such as a house fire or forest fire)

lume

cooking, fire, light (for a cigarette)

fogo (Br)

cooking fire

fogueiracamp fire

Verbs

acender o fogo

to light the fire

pôr fogo a
to set something on fire
pegar fogo (intr)
to catch fire

Fortune, luck, chance + **sorte**
fortune
má sorte
azar
bad luck
(boa) sorte
good luck
acaso
por acaso
por casualidade
by chance
destino
sina (R3)
fado (R3)
destiny
ventura
chance

Full

Adjectives + **cheio**
completo
full to capacity (e.g. hotel, parking lot)
repleto
full to capacity (volume)
cheio
full up
cheio a abarrotar
crammed full
+ **farto**
over-full, stuffed
atestado (Pt)
full to the brim (e.g. gas tank)
transbordante
a transbordar
overflowing
entupido
clogged up

	inchado swollen
	empanturrado empazinado full fed
	pleno full (in the abstract, e.g. “em plena vista” = in full view)
Verb	+ encher recheiar to fill up, stuff up
Noun	recheio filling (cake, pillow); stuffing (turkey)

Funny

Adjectives	+ engraçado divertido amusing cômico (Br)/ cómico (Pt) comical com piada com graça (Pt) espituoso (Pt) (R3) witty hilariante hilarious estranho funny (peculiar) surpreendente surprising esquisito odd
Expression	rir a bandeiras despregadas (Pt) to laugh very loudly (lit. “with widespread flags”)

Gift

Nouns	+ presente oferta dádiva (R3) oferta
-------	---

	doação
	donativo
	donation
	oferenda (R3)
	offering (in a church)
	talento
	dote (f)
	talent, natural gift
<hr/>	
Verbs	+ dar
	atribuir
	to attribute
	entregar
	to deliver, to hand in, to hand over
	proporcionar (R3)
	to provide (support, a living)
	abastecer
	fornecer
	to supply (with food, water)
	oferecer
	doar
	brindar (alguém com)
	to donate, to offer (somebody something)
	dotar
	dar um dote
	to endow, to give a dowry
	conceder
	otorgar (R3)
	to grant, to bestow (prize, honor, award)
	louvar
	elogiar
	to give praise
	ceder
	render-se
	to give in, to give up
	repartir
	distribuir
	to give out, to distribute
	destinar (R3)
	to earmark something to be given (to somebody)
	ser dotado
	to be gifted

Expression	dar a alma ao Criador to die (lit. “give one’s soul to the Creator”)
<hr/>	
<i>Glass</i>	+ vidro glass (the substance) + (o) cristal pane of glass, covering of glass (watch), type of glass, crystal + copo drinking glass (for any liquid [Pt], for water [Br]) xícara (Br) coffee cup chávena (Pt) coffee or tea cup (Pt) tea cup (Br) taça (Br) tea cup caneca (Pt) mug óculos eye glasses, spectacles binóculos binoculars monóculo monocle lupa magnifying glass + janela glass in window, windowpane
<hr/>	
<i>To grab, to get hold of</i>	+ pegar + agarrar tomar colher recolher to pick up, to gather agarrar-se a to grip, to hold on to apoderar-se de to seize, to take control of + apanhar to catch
<hr/>	

<i>Group of people</i>	<p>+ grupo associação agrupamento reunião formal group of people (gathered for a specific purpose); meeting</p> <p>+ conjunto (general)</p> <p>+ equipa (Pt) equipe (Br) time (Br) team</p> <p>partido political party</p> <p>fa(c)ção faction</p> <p>banda band, music-making group</p>
<i>To grow (tr)</i>	<p>+ criar to raise children or animals</p> <p>cultivar to raise/grow crops or plants</p>
<i>To grow (intr)</i>	<p>+ crescer aumentar incrementar to increase in quantity</p> <p>ampliar expandir extender to expand, to extend</p> <p>alargar prolongar to increase in length (including time)</p> <p>elevar-se to increase in height</p> <p>desenvolver-se to develop</p> <p>engrandecer to inflate, to praise (usually to an unjustifiable degree)</p> <p>ficar importante to grow in importance</p>

<i>Gun</i>	+ arma (de fogo) firearm
	revólver revolver
	pistola pistol
	espingarda (o) fuzil (o) rifle (Br) rifle
	escopeta shotgun
	canhão cannon
	artilheria artillery

<i>Hair</i>	+ cabelo hair on the human head
	+ pêlo hair on body
	barba beard
	bigode mustache
	pera goatee
	pêlo fur, coat of an animal
	cãs grey hairs
	peluche hair (of stuffed toy)
	crina mane of a horse
	juba lion's mane

<i>To happen, to take place, to occur</i>	+ acontecer
	+ ocorrer (R2)
	+ passar-se
	+ suceder

	ter lugar celebrar-se (for events) realizar-se to happen (in fulfillment of an expectation or preparation) sobrevir (R3) to happen unexpectedly
<i>Happy</i>	<hr/> + feliz + contente satisfeito happy (<i>feliz</i> is used with either <i>ser</i> or <i>estar</i> , <i>contente</i> and <i>satisfeito</i> with <i>estar</i> only) alegre cheerful jovial (R2–R3) jovial ditoso (R3) fortunate
<i>Heel</i>	<hr/> + (o) calcanhar (of foot) tacão of shoe salto (alto) high heel
<i>To help</i>	<hr/> + ajudar auxiliar (R2) socorrer (R2) to aid (suggests danger or problems) dar uma mão (R1) dar uma ajuda to give a hand + apoiar to support + assistir to assist (R2) facilitar to facilitate, to make easier

Hill

+ (o) **monte**
large hill

morro
cerro
colina
montículo (R3)
small hill

encosta
slope (on a road)

(o) **declive**
short, steep slope

ladeira
hillside

penhasco
penha
rocky hill or cliff

ribanceiro
despenhadeiro
embankment, cliff

To hit

+ **bater (em)**
to beat

dar porrada (R1)
dar pancada em (R1)
to beat up

dar um murro
to strike a blow (on)

golpear
to strike, punch, strike with a knife

dar uma bofetada
to give (somebody) a slap on the face

chicotear
to lash/whip

pegar-se com
to get in a fight with (also “to get involved”)

chocar com
to crash into (of e.g. car)

acertar em
to hit (a target)

bater um tambor
to hit/beat a drum

ir para cama
to hit the sack

<i>Hole</i>	+ abertura
	opening
	+ buraco
	hole in the ground (or in any surface)
	cavidade (R2–R3)
	cavity (in the ground)
	poço
	well
	furo
	puncture
	orifício
	orifice
	fenda
	brecha
gap (in a fence)	
toca	
rabbit hole	
cárie	
cavity in a tooth	
cova	
small hole, depression	
depressão (R3)	
depression	

<i>Holidays</i>	+ férias
	holiday, vacation
	+ festas
	dia festivo
	festividade
	religious holiday
	feriado
	dia feriado
	public holiday
	folga
soldier's leave; day off (for person working day shifts)	

<i>To hurry</i>	+ (estar com/ter) pressa
	to be in a hurry
	apressar-se
	andar com pressa
	to move/act in a hurry
diligenciar (R3)	
to hasten, to order something done in a hurry	

<i>Improvement</i>	melhoramento (Br) (R2–R3) (general) melhoria (R2–R3) (of economy or performance) melhora (of health) avanços advances + progresso progress
<i>To inform</i>	+ informar inteirar (R3) avisar notificar to notify anunciar to announce indicar comunicar to communicate advertir acautelar prevenir to warn
<i>Intelligent</i>	+ inteligente intelligent esperto (R1) sharp, shrewd, smart astuto perspicaz (R2–R3) sagaz (R2–R3) astute, perspicacious penetrante sharp lúcido clarividente clear-sighted genial brilliant vivo quick-minded

<i>Journey</i>	<p>+ (a) viagem jornada (R2–R3) day trip</p> <p>périplo (R3) sea voyage around all or part of coastline; the narrative of such a voyage</p> <p>excursão excursion, guided group tour</p> <p>volta short journey (e.g. round the block)</p> <p>traje(c)to trajectory</p>
<i>Kind, nice</i>	<p>+ amável amistoso amigável friendly</p> <p>benévolo benigno benevolente (R3) gentle</p> <p>carinhoso afê(c)tuoso affectionate</p> <p>+ bom bondoso bonacheirão (R1) good-natured (a good person)</p> <p>bem-intencionado well-meaning</p>
<i>To know</i>	<p>+ saber to have knowledge of, to have information memorized, to know how to do something</p> <p>+ conhecer to be familiar with, to know people, to be acquainted with, to have been to a place</p>
<i>Language</i>	<p>+ língua (o) idioma (R2) language (French, Portuguese, etc.)</p> <p>(a) linguagem style or register of language</p>

	<p>fala spoken language</p> <p>jargão, gíria (Pt) jargon, professional specialized terminology (Pt)</p> <p>calão (Pt), gíria (Br) slang</p>
<i>Lazy, idle</i>	<p>+ preguiçoso indolente (R2–R3) ocioso (R3) relatively lazy or with free time</p> <p>gandulo (R1) (Pt), vagabundo (Br) a lazy person, good for nothing</p>
<i>Leader, boss</i>	<p>+ chefe leader, boss, chief</p> <p>caudilho political leader</p> <p>(o) cacique local boss, local tyrant</p> <p>(o) cabecilha leader of a marginal group</p> <p>patrão boss, business owner</p> <p>(o/a) gerente manager, boss</p> <p>(o/a) responsável person in charge</p> <p>dono (R1) senhor proprietário owner, master</p>
<i>To leave (tr)</i>	<p>+ deixar + deixar de (+ inf) to quit (doing something)</p> <p>abandonar to stop doing something, to quit a project, course of study etc.</p>
<i>To leave (intr)</i>	<p>+ sair partir (used with destinations)</p>

zarpar
(of a ship [R3]; of persons [R1])

ir-se
ir-se embora
to leave a place, to go away

apartar-se de (R3)
afastar-se de (R2)
to wander from

embarcar
to leave (as on a boat), embark

Money

+ **dinheiro**
(o) capital
capital
moeda
coin; (foreign) currency
massa (R1) (Pt); **grana** (Br)
cash
troco
change
fortuna
dinherão (R1)
fortune, a great deal of money

Name

Nouns

+ **(o) nome**
first/Christian name (Br); name (in general)
(Pt)
nome de ba(p)tismo
first/Christian name (Pt)
apelido
surname (Pt); nickname (Br)
sobrenome
surname (Br)
alculha
nickname (Pt)

Verbs

+ **pôr/dar um nome**
to name
nomear (R2–R3)
to appoint, name, invoke a name

Native

Nouns	<p>+ nativo (also adj)</p> <p>+ natural de person born in . . .</p> <p>indígena autóctone (R3) aborígem (R2–R3) person born in (a place); of/from (a particular place); also applies to objects, cultures, etc.; also adj)</p>
Adjectives	<p>oriundo (R3) coming from a place, but not necessarily born there</p> <p>natal (denotes origin from a particular place: city, town, country etc.)</p> <p>materna nativa primeira native (of language)</p>
<i>Old</i>	<p>+ velho ancião mais velho (of people)</p> <p>+ antigo ancient; former</p> <p>vetusto (R3) ancient</p> <p>arcaico old, archaic</p> <p>antiquado old fashioned</p> <p>gasto (for old clothes)</p>
<i>Outskirts (of a city)</i>	<p>+ arredores district, any area outside of a city; suburbs</p> <p>periferia lit. outside circumference of a city; used for its surroundings in general</p>

	subúrbios cidade-satélite cidade-dormitório suburb, satellite/dormitory town
<i>Pattern</i>	+ modelo model + exemplo example, sample mostra, amostra sample + forma form desenho design, drawing padrão pattern (fabric, surface)
<i>Pay</i>	+ salário ordenado wages, salary pagamento payment honorário (Pt), pro labore (Br) professional fee jorna soldo (for soldiers) day's pay mensalidade monthly fee anualidade annual fee subsídio de férias (Pt) the extra check paid in Portugal in August
<i>Pool, Pond</i>	+ lago lake charco small pond poça large puddle + piscina swimming pool

<i>Poor</i>	<p>+ pobre necessitado indigente (R3) desvalido (R2–R3) remediado short of money, needy</p> <p>pobre desgraçado desamparado unfortunate</p> <p>desprotegido unprotected</p> <p>mau (Pt) em mau estado ruim (Br) in a poor state, poor quality, ruinous</p>
<hr/> <i>To take possession of</i>	<p>+ apoderar-se de deitar mão a (R1) to take possession/control of (in general)</p> <p>+ tirar/pegar (Br) to take away</p> <p>apropriar-se de (R2–R3) assenhorar-se de (R3) to appropriate</p> <p>usurpar (R2–R3) roubar to usurp, steal, take away from</p>
<hr/> <i>Poster, notice</i>	<p>+ letreiro sign</p> <p>póster cartaz poster</p> <p>anúncio advertisement</p> <p>aviso, placa warning sign or notice</p>
<hr/> <i>Proud</i>	<p>+ orgulhoso (de) proud (of) (may be positive or negative; takes <i>estar</i>)</p>

arrogante
soberbo (R3)
altivo (R2)
altaneiro (used to be R1, now R3)
 arrogant, haughty, stuck up
presunçoso
 presumptuous
vaidoso
 vain
convencido (Pt) (R1)
metido (Br) (R1)
presumido
 boastful

To put

+ **pôr**
colocar
posar
deitar
posicionar (R2–R3)
situar (R2–R3)
 to place, to situate
meter
introduzir (R2–R3)
 to insert, to put in(side)
postar-se
 to post (e.g. a police officer); to station
encostar
 to put against

To raise

+ **levantar**
elevantar (R2)
erguer (R2–R3)
 to pick up, to elevate
subir
 to put up (such as blinds, a window)
 to rise (prices) (intr)

To rebel

+ **rebelar-se**
insurre(c)cionar-se (R2–R3)
revoltar-se
insurgir-se (R2–R3)
 to revolt
ser indisciplinado, insubordinado
 to be insubordinate

	questionar to question (e.g. authority)
	amotinar-se to riot, to mutiny
<hr/>	
<i>Rich</i>	+ rico ricaço (R1) endinheirado very rich abastado well off novo-rico nouveau riche pesado, com muita gordura rich (of food)
<hr/>	
<i>To ride</i>	andar a cavalo cavalgar to ride a horse andar de bicicleta to ride a bicycle + andar de viajar em to ride a car, bus, train etc.
<hr/>	
<i>Ring</i>	aro ring or hoop círculo circle argola hoop, ring of metal anel finger ring anel de noivado engagement ring aliança wedding band/ring selo signet ring chaveiro key ring brinco earring argola (for curtains, gymnastics)
	<hr/>

Rock, stone+ **pedra**

rock (in geological sense, a medium sized rock or stone which one might lift)

rocha**rochedo**

large rock or boulder

penha

boulder

pedrinha

pebble

macadame

brita

gravel

Room+ **sala****quarto**

bedroom; hotel room (Pt)

apartamento (Br)

hotel room

sala de estar

living room

salão

salon

aposento (R3)

room used for formal occasions

quarto/sala de banho (Pt)**banheiro (Br)**

bathroom

sala de jantar

dining room

assoalhadas (Pt), quartos (Br) (Pt)

used for rooms in a house, as when counting their total number

escritório

personal office

(o) gabinete

personal office (Pt); office shared by a number of persons (Br)

sítio (Pt)**(o) lugar****(o) local**

(empty) space, site

espaço

space (in general)

Sad+ **triste****pouco contente****descontente**

discontented

pessimista**tristonho (R1)**

sad, gloomy

melancólico

melancholy

desconsolado

inconsolable

afrito

worried, anxious

+ **infeliz**

unhappy

abatido**deprimido**

depressed, dejected

lamentável

lamentable (of actions)

desafortunado (R3)**desditoso (R3)**

unfortunate

*To say, to speak,
to talk*+ **falar (intr)**

to speak (intr), to speak a language, to say

+ **dizer**+ **falar (tr)**

to say, to tell (Br)

conversar**bater um papo (R1) (Br)**

to chat, to converse

expressar-se

to express

pronunciar

to pronounce

fofocar (Br)

to gossip

mexericar (Pt), lançar boatos

to speak badly about someone, to spread rumours

To see

+ ver

+ **olhar para**

to look at

observar**examinar**

to observe, examine, look at closely

notar

to notice, take notice

descobrir**perceber****dar conta (de) que**

to notice, to realize

presenciar**testemunhar**

to witness

sondar

to scan, survey

distinguir

to distinguish

fitar**olhar fixamente****seguir com os olhos**

to stare at

dar uma vista de olhos (Pt)**dar uma olhada (Br)****dar uma olhadela (Pt)**

to take a quick look

To send+ **mandar (R1–R2)**+ **enviar (R2)****despachar**

to dispatch

pôr no correio

to send by mail

expedir (R2–R3)

to expedite

remeter (R2)

to remit

To shine+ **brilhar****luzir****reluzir**

to shine (literally)

resplandecer

to shine, to blaze

rutilar (R3)
cintilar
 to sparkle
refulgir (R3)
 to glitter (diamonds)
incandecer
 to shine so brightly that it blinds, to flash brightly
fulgurar (R3)
 to shine brightly
piscar
 to flash intermittently
bruxulear (R3)
tremeluzir
 to flicker (candle)
faiscar
 to twinkle
 + **brilhar**
sobressair
 to stand out, to shine (figurative)

To shoot

+ **disparar**
atirar
 to fire a weapon
ferir
 to wound
matar
 to kill
matar de um tiro
 to shoot dead
atirar em
dar um tiro em
 to shoot at
atirar
lançar
arremessar (R2–R3)
 to throw a ball
xutar (a bola)
dar um pontapé/xuto
 to shoot (kick a ball)

Shop, store

+ **loja**
armazém
 department store

negócio
comércio
 business
mercado
 market (open-air or covered)
feira
 open-air market (of a periodic nature)
centro comercial
shopping
 mall, shopping center
minimercado
 small grocery store
supermercado
 supermarket
hipermercado
 superstore

To show

+ **mostar**
indicar (R2)
salientar (R2)
pôr em evidência
 to point out
apontar para
 to point to
demonstrar
 to demonstrate
aparecer
 to show up
revelar
desvendar
 to reveal, to unveil

Side

+ **lado**
perfil
lado
 (of a person)
de lado
 on the side
flanco
 (of animal), flank
ladeira
vertente
lado
 (of hill)

	lado (of record, audio cassette)
	alcatra side of meat
	borda
	beira
	margem edge
	orla shore, bank
<hr/>	
<i>To steal, to rob</i>	+ roubar furtar (R3) subtrair (R3) fanar (R1) limpar surripiar (R1) desviar to embezzle assaltar to hold up, mug (rob somebody on the street)
<hr/>	
<i>Stick</i>	+ pau stick of wood (in general); stick, handle to hold something with (e.g. of broom, lollipop) vara pole bastão (R3) bengala cane varinha stick, wand galhos sticks for kindling
<hr/>	
<i>Storm</i>	+ tempestade storm (in general) + trovoada thunderstorm (o) temporal tormenta (R3) strong storm

borrasca (R3)

storm with rain and wind, sometimes at sea

nevão

snowstorm

tempestade de granizo

hailstorm

String

Nouns

+ **corda**

rope

cordel**guita**

thin rope, twine

cordão

cord

fió

thread

linha

fishing line, sewing thread

filamento

filament (metal ore, bodily tissue, light bulb)

atacador (Pt), cordão (Br) (Pt)

shoelace

Expressions

estar por um fio

to be hanging by a thread

romance de cordel (Br)

a short, melodramatic, popular story sold at a fair or by a peddler (like an old English chapbook); so called because they were displayed on a string for sale

mexer os/ums cordéis/cordelinos

to pull some strings (exercise influence)

Strong (of people)+ **forte****com força****musculoso**

muscular

robusto

solid, tough

sólido

hefty

	vigoroso enérgico vigorous poderoso powerful valente strong in character
<i>Stubborn</i>	<hr/> teimoso obstinado (R2) persistente porfiado (R3) persistent tenaz (R2–R3) pertinaz (R2–R3) contumaz (R3) tenacious, stubborn cabeçudo (Pt) (R1) cabeça dura (R1) pig-headed, hard-headed
<i>Stupid</i>	<hr/> + estúpido parvo (Pt) (R1) dumb tonto foolish, silly, stupid idiota imbecile cretino idiot(ic) burro (R1) atrasado mental (R1) idiot, fool estúpido que nem uma porta dumb as a doorknob
<i>To take</i>	<hr/> + levar to carry, to take, to take away + tomar to take medicine, notes; also to drink, to have breakfast conduzir (Pt) guiar (Pt) dirigir (Br) to drive

	guiar to lead
	transportar to transport
	tirar to take a picture or photocopy
<hr/> <i>Teacher</i>	+ professor senhor(a) professor(a) setor/setora (senhor[a] doutor[a]) (Pt) high school teacher
	docente university instructor, lecturer
	catedrático (Pt), titular (Br) university (full) professor
	mestre teacher to an apprentice; also a person with a master's degree
<hr/> <i>Thin (of people)</i>	+ magro delgado (R2–R3)
	esbelto slim, svelte (usually positive, whereas <i>magro</i> is not)
	enxuto lean (has positive connotation)
	ossudo bony
	descarnado cadavérico thin (in the face), cadaverous
	esquelético skeletal
	famélico (R2–R3) skinny, starving
	definhado emaciated
	espantalho (R1) a scarecrow
	um pau de virar tripas (Pt) skinny as a rail
<hr/> <i>To think</i>	+ pensar + pensar que to think that

+ achar que
 to think/believe that
imaginar que
 to imagine that
ser de opinião que
opinar que (R3)
 to be of the opinion that
conceber
 to conceive
inventar
 to invent, to think up
refle(c)tir sobre (R2)
 to reflect upon
ficar a pensar em
 to brood over
ponderar sobre
 to ponder
meditar em/sobre
 to meditate on
pensar de
 to think about (in questions)
 Example:
O que pensa das notícias?
 What do you think of the news?
pensar em
 to think about
 Example:
Não penso muito em política.
 I do not think much about politics.

Tooth

+ dente (m)
dentes de leite
 first teeth, milk teeth
molar
 molar
canino
 canine tooth
incisivos
 front teeth
dente do siso
 wisdom tooth

<i>Top</i>	<p>+ (a) parte de cima (a) parte superior top (general)</p> <p>+ topo (o) alto (de) (adjective used as noun) top, high part (of e.g. stairs)</p> <p>pico cimo (of hill or mountain)</p> <p>copa (of tree)</p> <p>topo (of table; of list)</p> <p>(a) superfície (of liquid)</p> <p>teto top of bus; ceiling</p> <p>telhado roof</p>
------------	---

<i>Trick</i>	<p>+ truque + engano act of deception</p> <p>treta (R1) lie</p> <p>travessura act of mischief</p> <p>(o) ardil (R2–R3) (o) estratagema ruse</p> <p>burla artimanha tramóia hoax, dirty trick</p> <p>pregar uma partida a (Pt) to play a trick on</p>
--------------	--

<i>To try</i>	
with verbs	<p>+ tentar fazer alguma coisa procurar fazer alguma coisa (R2) to try to do something</p> <p>esforçar-se por fazer alguma coisa to make the effort to do something</p>

	esmerar-se por fazer alguma coisa (R2–R3) to try one's hardest to do something
with nouns	+ tentar alguma coisa to attempt something provar alguma coisa to try, to taste something ensaiar alguma coisa to test out something experimentar to try on (clothing) fazer uma experiência to experiment (scientific), put to the test
<i>Wall</i>	+ parede interior wall of building muro exterior wall (not part of a building) taipa wall of garden, small outside wall muralha large wall of city, castle barreira barrier
<i>To waste</i>	+ desperdiçar + perder (time, opportunity) desbaratar deitar dinheiro à rua (R1) atirar dinheiro pela janela (R1) to waste money atirar fora to throw away
<i>To wear</i>	+ usar + levar + pôr (to put on) vestir trazer posto/vestido to wear estrear to wear for the first time + gastar to wear out

<i>Wind</i>	+ vento rajada gust of wind brisa breeze (o) vendaval gale (o) furacão hurricane torvelinho remoinho whirlwind
<i>Window</i>	+ janela window in house or building clarabóia skylight vidro windowpane, glass vitral stained-glass window guiché cashier's window o pára-brisas windshield (car)
<i>Work</i>	+ trabalho emprego posto ocupação post, position, job tarefa (o) labor (R3) task tacho (R1) paid post obra a work, a work of art, public works trabalho de casa tarefa de casa (Br) dever de casa homework

12 Portuguese for Spanish speakers

Portuguese has many similarities with the Spanish language. Especially in its written form, Portuguese may be read by an educated Spanish speaker. However, there are some important differences which can mislead the Spanish speaker who is either a student of Portuguese, a translator, or traveling in a Portuguese-speaking country. This section is designed in order to help Spanish speakers best utilize their own language skills to master, or at least function in, Portuguese.

12.1 Pronunciation

Pronunciation is one of the chief areas in which Portuguese (with all its many variants) and Spanish differ. The following equivalents and differences are noted in order to help avoid confusion. Many sounds are similar or identical in Spanish and Portuguese; knowing when to distinguish between these and those that are different greatly aids communication. This is not a phonetic prescription for pronunciation, but a guide to help Spanish speakers with comprehension of spoken Portuguese.

The following letters are pronounced the same (or almost the same) in Spanish and Portuguese:

b	<u>b</u> onito	pretty
c	<u>c</u> asa	house
d	<u>d</u> á	he/she gives

d is always pronounced the same in Portuguese, whether at the beginning or between vowels, unlike in Spanish.

f	<u>f</u> iar	to trust
h (silent)	<u>h</u> otel	

i	<u>I</u> sabel	
m	<u>m</u> otor	
n	<u>n</u> ada	nothing
p	<u>p</u> obre	poor
	<i>Note:</i> The initial <i>p</i> in <i>psicologia</i> etc. is not silent in Portuguese.	
qu	<u>q</u> ue	what/that
	<i>Note:</i> <i>Qu</i> is pronounced the same as Spanish <i>cu</i> before <i>a</i> or <i>o</i> . <i>Quando</i> is therefore pronounced the same as Spanish <i>cuando</i> .	
t	<u>t</u> er	to have
	<i>Note:</i> In most areas of central and southern Brazil, the letter <i>t</i> before <i>i</i> and unstressed <i>e</i> is pronounced like <i>ch</i> in Spanish.	
u	<u>u</u> peru	turkey

The following letters are pronounced differently from those in Spanish, at least in some positions.

a	<i>a</i> is pronounced the same in both languages when stressed: cá [a]. In European Portuguese, the unstressed <i>a</i> is pronounced [α], similar to the schwa sound in “butter” in English.
ç	The ç is pronounced the same as the Spanish <i>s</i> .
d	<i>Note:</i> In some areas of Brazil (such as Rio de Janeiro), the letter <i>d</i> before <i>i</i> and unstressed <i>e</i> is pronounced as the “ <i>j</i> ” in English.
e	<i>e</i> is pronounced approximately the same in both languages when stressed. In European Portuguese, the final <i>e</i> when unstressed is pronounced similar to English schwa, as in the English unstressed “a.” In Brazilian Portuguese, the final unstressed <i>e</i> is pronounced the same as the Portuguese <i>i</i> .

For accented letters, *é* [ɛ] is pronounced similar to the Spanish *e* in *estar* while *ê* [e] is pronounced similar to the sound in *queso*.

- g** *g* [g] is pronounced the same as Spanish before *a*, *o*, and *u*, as in Spanish *gato*.
However, it is pronounced similarly to the Argentine pronunciation of ‘y’ [ʒ] as in *yo* before an *e* or *i*.
- j** *j* is always pronounced like the *g* before *e* and *i* (see above).
- l** In European Portuguese, the initial *l* is more palatalized (similar to the Catalan *l*) – *lata*.
In Brazil, an *l* at the end of a syllable or word is pronounced like *u* – *Brasil* [ziw].
- o** In Portuguese, the final *-o* is pronounced the same as *u*. Otherwise, while there are nuances (degree of openness: *o avô*, *a avó*), the Portuguese *o* is similar to that in Spanish.
- r** The single *r* within words is pronounced the same as the Spanish tap *r* – *caro*. When a word ends in *r*, the pronunciation varies widely in different regions in Brazil, Portugal, and Lusophone Africa.
- rr** The standard pronunciation for initial *r* and *rr* is similar to that of the Spanish *j*.
- s** Single *s* is pronounced as in Spanish at the beginning of words – *Sara*.
The single *s* is pronounced like the English *z* between vowels – *casa*.
The single *s* is usually pronounced rather like the English “sh” at the end of words such as *elefantes* in Portugal, Rio de Janeiro, and in standard Portuguese in Lusophone Africa.
- ss** Double *ss* is pronounced like the *s* in Spanish.
- v** The letter *v* is pronounced like the English *v* – *volume*.

- x** The letter *x* can have different pronunciations. It is often pronounced approximately like the English *sh*, in particular at the beginning of a word – *México*, *xadrez*, *xarope* – or before *t* and *p* – *sexta*.
It can also be pronounced *z* – *existir* – or as [ks], as in *sexo*.
- z** In most positions, *z* is pronounced like the English letter.
The letter *z* is pronounced like the [ʒ] in “pleasure” at the end of a word – *capaz*.

In Portuguese, all vowels can be nasalized and this process is shown in writing by the tilde “~”, or an ‘m’ or ‘n’ after the vowel.

Examples:

um (one)

pão (bread)

conceito (concept)

12.2 Cognates with different genders

Some words have different genders in Portuguese and Spanish. The following are important ones to remember:

Portuguese	Spanish	English
a análise	<i>el/la análisis</i>	analysis
a arte	<i>el arte</i>	art
a árvore	<i>el árbol</i>	tree
a fraude	<i>el fraude</i>	fraud
a lineage	<i>el linaje</i>	lineage
a ordem	<i>el/la orden</i>	order
a percentagem	<i>el porcentaje</i>	percentage
a viagem	<i>el viaje</i>	trip
o cárcere	<i>la cárcel</i>	jail
o computador	<i>la computadora</i>	computer
o dote	<i>la dote</i>	dowry
o leite	<i>la leche</i>	milk
o mar	<i>el/la mar</i>	sea
o massacre	<i>la masacre</i>	massacre
o mel	<i>la miel</i>	honey
o morango	<i>la fresa</i>	strawberry
o paradoxo	<i>la paradoja</i>	paradox
o postal	<i>la postal</i>	postcard

o sal	<i>la sal</i>	salt
o sangue	<i>la sangre</i>	blood
o sinal	<i>la señal</i>	sign

Also, all letters of the alphabet are masculine in Portuguese while they are feminine in Spanish: *o* 'a' (the letter 'a')

12.3 False cognates

Many Portuguese words look similar or identical to Spanish words, especially if they share a common (usually Latin) source. These words are called cognates. However, there are many misleading or false cognates.

The following words are false cognates in Spanish and Portuguese.

Portuguese	English equivalent	Spanish	English equivalent
achar	to find, to believe	<i>hallar</i>	to find
apenas	only	<i>apenas</i>	barely
aula (f)	class	<i>el aula</i>	classroom
bastante	much, a lot	<i>bastante</i>	enough
Braga	the city Braga	<i>braga</i>	panties
cadeira (f)	chair	<i>la cadera</i>	hip
calção (m)	shorts	<i>el calzón</i>	underwear (Latin America)
contestar	to contest	<i>contestar</i>	to answer
costas (f, pl)	the back	<i>la costa</i>	coast
embaraçada	embarrassed	<i>embarazada</i>	pregnant
esquisito	weird	<i>exquisito</i>	exquisite
fraco	weak	<i>flaco</i>	thin
frente (f)	the front	<i>la frente</i>	forehead
gente (f)	we	<i>la gente</i>	people
graça (f)	humor/grace	<i>la grasa</i>	grease/fat
lista (f)	the list	<i>la lista</i>	list; ready (f)
noivo/a	betrothed/fiancé(e)	<i>novio/a</i>	boyfriend/girlfriend
obrigado/a	thank you	<i>obligado/a</i>	forced
película (f)	plastic film, but movie is <i>filme</i>	<i>la película</i>	any film
pelo (m)	body hair	<i>el pelo</i>	hair
(estar) pronto	to be ready	<i>pronto</i>	fast
precioso	valuable	<i>precioso</i>	lovely, beautiful
raro	rare	<i>raro</i>	strange
roxo	purple	<i>rojo</i>	red
sugestão (f)	suggestion	<i>sugestión</i>	a fantasy

tapa (m) (Br)	a tap (hit)	<i>la tapa</i>	snack (Spain); lid or bottle cap (Latin America)
tão pouco	so little	<i>tampoco</i>	neither
todavía	however	<i>todavía</i>	still
todo	all of	<i>todo</i>	everything

12.4 Spelling

The following equivalents can be observed for Portuguese/Spanish cognates:

- words ending in *-ción* and *-sión* end in *-ção* or *-são* in Portuguese.
Examples:
televisión – **televisão**
concepción – **concepção** (Pt), **conceção** (Br)
- The ending *-ería* in Spanish has as its equivalent *-aria* in Portuguese.
Example:
zapatería – **sapataria**
- The word *y* (“and”) in Spanish is always spelled *e* in Portuguese.
- The letters *ll* and *j* in Spanish have several equivalents in Portuguese.
Examples:
viejo – **velho**
llevar – **levar**
amarillo – **amarelo**
Sevilla – **Sevilha**
- The letter *ñ* in Spanish is often represented by the combination *nh* (but still pronounced ‘ny’) in Portuguese.
Examples:
cañon – **canhão**
España – **Espanha**

12.5 *Ser* with location

Ser is used with any permanent location in Portuguese (where Spanish would use *estar*).

Example:

San Francisco está en California – São Francisco é na Califórnia.
San Francisco is in California.

12.6 Differences in verb tense and mode

1. Most verb tenses and modes are used similarly in Portuguese and in Spanish, most notably the past tenses of the indicative. For compound tenses, the auxiliary verb in Portuguese is *ter*, while in Spanish it is *haber*.

Examples:

Quando era criança, passava sempre as férias na praia.

Quando era niño, siempre pasaba mis vacaciones en la playa.

When I was a child, I always used to spend my vacation on the beach.

No sábado passado não comi feijoada.

El sábado pasado no comí “feijoada.”

Last Saturday, I didn’t eat bean stew.

Quando ele soube das promoções, já tinha comprado os sapatos, que foram bem caros.

Quando supo de los saldos, ya había comprado los zapatos, que fueron muy caros.

When he heard about the sales, he had already bought the shoes, which were very expensive.

For further information about the Portuguese tenses, please refer to Sections 5.1.2, 5.1.3 and 5.2.2.

2. Spanish does not have a future subjunctive (Section 5.3.3) or a personal infinitive (Section 5.1.5). It normally uses the present indicative or present subjunctive where Portuguese uses the future subjunctive, and an ordinary infinitive, or a subjunctive construction, where Portuguese uses the personal infinitive.

Examples:

Se vocês quiserem ir em Santa Catarina durante o fim-de-semana, me liguem. (Br)

Se ustedes quieren ir a Santa Catarina este fin de semana, llámenme.

If you want to go to Santa Catarina during the weekend, call me.

Tu precisas de lhes emprestar a tua máquina fotográfica para eles poderem tirar boas fotos.

Tienes que prestarles tu cámara para que puedan sacar buenas fotos.

You have to lend them your camera so that they can take good pictures.

3. With concessive-type clauses (i.e. those introduced by “although,” etc.), Portuguese uses only the subjunctive mode (except for a few occurrences with *a pesar de que*, mainly in Brazilian Portuguese), but in Spanish the indicative is regularly used with *aunque* to convey the meaning ‘although’ as opposed to ‘even if’:

Examples:

Ainda que seja tarde, tenho de ir ao hospital porque me chamaram.

Aunque es tarde, tengo que ir al hospital porque me han llamado.

Although it is late, I have to go to the hospital because they beeped me.

Aunque sea tarde, tengo que ir al hospital porque me han llamado.

Even if it is late, I [still] have to go to the hospital because they beeped me.

4. Although the use of the present indicative is almost identical in Spanish and in Portuguese, European Portuguese has a periphrastic progressive form (Section 5.8.2), preferring it to the gerund form, whereas in Brazil the gerund is used, as it is in Spanish and English.

Examples:

Estou a escrever uma carta. (Pt)/Estou escrevendo uma carta. (Br)

Estoy escribiendo una carta.

I'm writing a letter.

5. The present perfect in Portuguese signals an event or action that started in the past but continues into the present with some frequency. It is not used to denote a past action in a recent past time-frame, as it is in Peninsular Spanish.

Examples:

Tenho corrido na praia, ultimamente.

He corrido por la playa recientemente.

I've been running on the beach, lately.

Já entreguei o filme ao André.

Ya he entregado la película a Andrés. (Spain)

Ya entregué la película a Andrés. (Latin America)

I've already returned the movie to Andrew/ I already returned the film to Andrew.

For further information on the present perfect in Portuguese, please see Section 5.2.1.

Index of Portuguese words

- à 48, 55–58, 167
expressions with *à*
a bordo de 57
à direita 57
à esquerda 57
à francesa 56
à frente 57
a granel 56
a luz de 57
à meia-noite 55
a meio 57
a partir de 55
a pente fino 56
a peso 56
a ponto de 55
a primeira
 vista 55
a princípio 56
a propósito 56
a qual 174
a que 185
à razão 56
a tempo 56
à toa 56
à tona 56
à tripa forra
à vista 56
à vontade 56
abandonar 222
abarrotoado 212
abastado 228
abastecer 213
abatido 230
abdicar 66
abertura 219
aborígene 224
aborrecer 66
abrir 153
abster-se 66
abstrair-se 66
abusar 45, 66
acabar 44, 61, 66, 73, 78, 156
academia 50
acaso 211
aceder 57, 187
aceitar 153, 187
acender 153
acento 48
acertar 73
achar 44, 66, 210, 238
aço 48
acontecer 44
acordão 131
acorrer 57
acostumar-se 57
acreditar 73
acrobata 128
a(c)tualizar 43
a(c)tualmente 43
açular 48
admirável 189
advertir 43, 220
afastar 66
afastar-se 223
afetuoso 221
aflito 230
agarrar 214
agarrar-se 214
agenda 43
agente 128
agonia 43
agonizar 43
agora 178
agreste 196
agricultor 83
agrupamento 215
aí 178
ajudar 43, 217
alargar 215
alcatra 234
alcumha 223
alegre 217
algo 176
alguém 176
algum 175
alguns 119
ali 178
aliança 228
alistar-se 73
altaneiro 227
alteração 197
alterar 198
alterar-se 188
altercação 206
ativo 227
alto 135, 239
alvíssaras 132
amanhã 178
amarrar 57
amável 221
amigável 221
amistoso 221
amotinar-se 228
ampliar 215
amputar 201
anais 132
anátema 127
ancião 224
andar 73, 219
anel 228
angústia 43
angustiado 44
animal 130
aniquilar 205
ansiar 78
ante 59
antepor-se 57
antes 59
antigo 135, 224
antiquado 224
antolhos 132
anualidade 225
anunciar 220

- anúncio 226
 ao alcance de 57
 ao almoço 56
 ao ar livre 57
 ao contrário 56
 ao fim e ao cabo 56
 ao fundo 57
 ao lado 57
 ao litro 56
 ao longe 57
 ao longo de 56
 ao meio 57
 ao meio-dia 56
 ao mesmo tempo 56
 ao nível 57
 ao ombro 57
 ao pé 57
 ao sol 57
 aos poucos 56
 ao telefone 57
 apagar 201
 apaixonar-se 78
 apalpar 209
 apanhar 214
 aparecer 188, 233
 aparência 188
 aparentar 188
 apartar-se 223
 apear-se 66
 apelido 223
 aperceber-se 66
 apertado 118
 apertar 61
 apesar de 51
 apiedar-se 173
 apitadela 197
 aplicar 43
 apoderar-se 66, 226
 apoderar-se de 214
 apoiar 190, 217
 apontar 233
 após 60
 aposento 229
 apostar 73
 apressar-se 219
 apresentação 45
 apresentar 45
 apropriar-se 226
 aprovação 189
 aprovar 189
 aproveitar-se 66
 aproximar-se 66
 aquele 167, 175
 aqueles 175
 aqui 178
 aquilo 167, 175
- ar 188
 arcaico 224
 arcar 61
 ardil 239
 aresta 207
 argola 228
 arma 216
 armar-se 66, 73
 armazém 190, 232
 aro 228
 arredores 132, 224
 arremessar 232
 arrepender-se 67
 arrogante 227
 arrojado 195
 arrostrar-se 209
 arruaceiro 208
 artífice 43
 artilheria 216
 artimanha 239
 às cegas 56
 às tantas da noite 56
 às vezes 56
 ascendência 44
 aspecto 188
 aspero 196
 aspeto 209
 asqueroso 206
 assalar 204
 assaltante 201
 assaltar 201
 assegurar-se 67
 assenhar-se 226
 assentir 48
 assento 195
 assim 52, 178
 assistir 43, 217
 asso 48
 assoalhadas 229
 associação 215
 assolar 48
 assustar-se 61
 astuto 220
 atacador 235
 atascado 212
 até 60–61
 atender 43
 aterrar 73
 atestado 211
 atestar 67
 atirar 232
 atordoar-se 61
 atraente 191
 atrás 190
 atrever-se 57
 atribuir 57
- audacioso 195
 aula 44
 aumentar 215
 autocarro 50
 autóctone 224
 autorização 189
 auxiliar 217
 avaliar 73
 avançar 73
 avenços 220
 avental 199
 avisar 67, 220
 avistar-se 61
 avó 129
 avô 129
 axioma 127
 azar 211
 azul 130
- bacalhau à Braz 57
 bandido 200
 banheiro 229
 banho 229
 banqueiro 83
 ba(p)tismo 223
 barafustar 61
 barão 129
 barba 84, 216
 barbearia 84
 barçaça 193
 barco 193
 baronesa 129
 barraca 43
 barreira 240
 barril 130
 basear-se 73
 bastante 179
 bastão 234
 bastião 131
 basto 196
 bata 198
 bater 73, 203, 218, 230
 beata 196
 bebé 194
 beira 207, 233
 bela 191
 belas-artes 132
 belíssimo 191
 belo 191
 bem 178
 benção 131
 benevolente 221
 benévolo 221
 benigno 221
 berlinde 191
 berrar 61

- bibe 198
 biberon 193
 biblioteca 45
 bica 50
 bicha 50
 bicho 50
 bicicleta 228
 bico 207
 bigode 216
 bilhete 50, 56
 binóculos 214
 bofetada 218
 bola 191
 bom 221
 bonde 50
 bondoso 221
 bonita 191
 bonitinho 191
 borda 234
 bordar 43
 bordo 207
 borrasca 235
 bote 193
 botija 193
 bravo 194
 brecha 219
 brigar 206
 brilhar 231
 brincar 57
 brinco 228
 brindar 57, 213
 brisa 241
 britar 204, 205
 broto 191
 bruxulear 232
 bucho 48
 bulha 206
 bunda 195
 bundão 195
 burla 239
 burraco 219
 burro 236
 bússula 44
 buxo 48

 cabeça 46, 236
 cabecilha 222
 cabeçudo 236
 cabeleireiro 83
 cabelo 216
 caçar 48
 cachorro 50
 cacique 222
 cada 176
 cadeira 126
 calão 222

 calcar 205
 calceteiro 83
 calendas 132
 cama 218
 camada 199
 camarada 128
 cambiar 198
 caminhar 73
 canalha 208
 caneca 214
 caneta 126
 canhão 216
 canino 238
 cânone 129–130
 cansar-se 67
 cantil 193
 canto 199, 208
 cantor 83
 cantora 126
 cão 131
 capacitar-se 67
 capaz 45
 capelão 131
 capital 46, 223
 capitão 131
 caprichar 73
 cara 188, 209
 caravela 193
 carecer 67
 cárie 219
 carinhoso 221
 carne de porco 45
 carpinteiro 83
 carregar 61, 73
 carro 126
 cartaz 226
 carteira 50
 carteiro 83
 cãs 132, 216
 casa 126, 129–130
 casaco 198
 casal 130
 casarão 131
 casar-se 168
 cassar 48
 casualidade 211
 catalão 131
 catedrático 237
 cauda 196
 caudilho 222
 cavalgar 228
 cavalo 228
 cavidade 219
 ceder 57
 cedo 178
 ccio 48

 celebrar-se 217
 cem 49
 censo 49
 centrar-se 73
 centro comercial 233
 cerrado 196
 cerro 218
 certamente 179
 certo 175
 cerveja 84
 cervejaria 84
 chamar 67, 78, 197
 chamada 197
 chamamento 197
 chamar-se 173, 197
 charco 225
 charlatão 131
 chatear 187
 chatear-se 61, 188
 chaveiro 228
 chávina 214
 chefe 222
 chegar 57, 192
 chegar-se 58
 cheio 211
 cheirar 58
 chicotear 218
 chocar 218
 cidadão 131
 cidade-satélite 225
 cimo 239
 cintilar 232
 cinto 49
 círculo 228
 círio 48
 clarabóia 241
 clarividente 220
 cliente 128
 cobrir 67, 153
 coerente 44
 cognominar 65
 coibir-se 67
 colar 50
 colar-se 58
 colega 128
 colegial 128
 colégio 44
 colher 214
 colina 218
 colocar 227
 com 61–63
 Expressions with *com*
 com licença 123
 com quanto 49
 com tanto 49
 com tudo 49

- coma 127
 comando 44
 combater 62
 comboio 50
 começar 58, 78, 192
 comer à farta 57
 cómico 212
 como 185
 comover-se 62
 comparecer 188
 participar 73
 compasso 44
 competição 199
 competir 62, 199
 competitivo 199
 completo 211
 compreensivo 46
 comprido 118
 comprometer-se 58
 comunicar 220
 concebir 238
 conceder 213
 conceito 126
 cancelho 48
 concerto 48
 concordar 73, 187
 concorrer 43, 58, 199
 concurso 44, 199
 conde 44, 129
 condessa 129
 condição 127
 condoer-se 67, 173
 condolências 132
 conductor 44
 conduzir 236
 confiante 44
 confiar 73
 confidente 44
 conformar-se 62
 confrontar 209
 congruente 44
 conhecer 141, 159, 221
 conjunto 215
 conquanto 49
 conquistar 203
 conselho 48
 consentir 73, 187
 conserto 48
 conservante 45
 constipado 44
 consistente 44
 consistir 73
 consolar 48
 constante 44
 constar 67
 consular 48
- conta 44
 contabilista 84
 contagem 200
 contanto 49
 contar 62
 contente 217
 contista 84
 conto 44
 contorno 207
 contra 63
 contribuir 58
 contudo 49
 contumaz 236
 convencer 67
 convencido 227
 conversar 230
 converter 73
 convocar 197
 convocatória 197
 copa 239
 copas 132
 cópia 47
 copiar 47
 copo 214
 coração 131
 corajoso 194
 corda 235
 cordão 235
 cordel 235
 coroa 50
 corpulento 209
 correeiro 83
 correio 231
 corrigir 44
 corrigir-se 67
 cortar 62
 corte 46
 cortesão 131
 coser 48
 costas 190
 coto 48
 couto 48
 cova 219
 coveiro 83
 cozer 48
 crer 73
 crescer 215
 cretino 236
 criar 215
 criminoso 208
 crina 216
 cristal 214
 cristão 131
 cruzar-se 62
 cu 195
 cujo 174
- cultivado 44
 cultivar 215
 cura 46
 curar-se 67
 curso 44
 curtir 50
 curto 118
 cutileiro 83
 czar 129
 czarina 129
- dádiva 212
 danificar 202
 daqui a uma semana 56
 dar 47, 58, 67, 73, 78, 138,
 192, 209, 210, 213
 dar andamento 45
 dar-se 62, 78
 dar-se conta 46
 datar 67
 de 64–69, 167
 Expressions with *de*
 de cabo a rabo 57
 de jeito nenhum 52
 de onde 185
 de qualquer jeito 52
 debate 206
 década 119
 decepção 44
 decepcionar-se 62
 decidir-se 58
 declive 218
 decompor 73
 decorrer 67
 defesa 46
 definhado 237
 defraudar 202
 deitar 226, 227, 240
 deitar-se 173, 207
 deixar 67, 222
 deixar de 222
 dela 136
 dele 136
 delegar 73
 delgado 237
 delinquente 208
 demais 179
 demandar 190
 demasiado 179
 demitir-se 67
 demolição 203
 demolir 204
 demonstrar 233
 demorar-se 173
 dente 238
 dentista 128

- depender 67
 depois 178
 depositar 73
 depósito 190
 depreender-se 67
 depressa 178
 depressão 219
 deprimido 230
 derrotar 203
 derrubar 204
 desacostumar-se 67
 desafortunado 230
 desaguar 73
 desamparado 226
 desbaratar 204
 descarnado 237
 descendência 44
 descer 67
 descoberto 46
 descobrir 210, 231
 descolar 67
 desconfiar 67
 desconsolado 230
 descrever 67
 desculpar 124
 desculpar-se 62
 desde 69
 desditoso 230
 desembocar 73
 desenho 207, 225
 desenvencilhar-se 67
 desenvolver-se 215
 deserto 126
 desfazer 195, 204
 desfazer-se 67, 73
 desgostar-se 62
 desgraça 44
 desgraçado 226
 desintegrar 202
 desistir 67
 desmaio 44
 desmantelar 204
 despachar 231
 desbaratar 240
 despedaçar 195
 despedir-se 67
 desperdiçar 240
 despojar-se 67
 desprotegido 226
 destacar-se 67
 destemido 194
 destino 211
 destoar 67
 destroçar 205
 destruição 203
 destruir 202
 desvalido 226
 desvão 131
 desviar 44, 234
 desviar-se 67
 deteriorar 202
 detrás 190
 devagar 178
 devastar 204
 dever 160, 241
 devolver 118, 190
 dezena 119
 dia a dia 56
 diagrama 207
 diante 69
 diferir 67
 digamos 52
 diligenciar 219
 dinheirão 223
 dinheiro 223
 discordar 67
 discussão 206
 discutir 62
 disfarçar-se 67
 disfrutar 208
 disparar 232
 dispensar 67
 dispor 67
 disputa 206
 dissimular 202
 dissuadir 67
 distar 67
 distinguir 67, 231
 distinguir-se 74
 distrair-se 62, 208
 distribuir 213
 ditoso 217
 divertido 212
 divertir 44
 divertir-se 62, 173, 191, 208
 dividir 78
 divorciar-se 67
 dizer 138, 141, 153, 154,
 230
 doação 213
 docente 237
 donar 213
 donativo 213
 dono 222
 dormir 138
 dorso 190
 dotar 213
 dote 213
 droga 84
 drogaria 84
 drogar-se 62
 duque 129
 duquesa 129
 duvidar 67
 dúzia 119
 e depois 52
 editar 44
 editorial 46
 educado 44
 efe(c)tivamente 179
 eficaz 44
 eficiente 44
 ela 169
 elas 169
 ele 169
 elé(c)trico 50
 eleger 153
 elegível 48
 eles 169
 elevar 227
 elevar-se 215
 elogio 44
 em 70–74, 167
 em primeiro lugar 52
 em resumo 52
 embaixador 126, 129
 embaixatriz 129
 embarcar 223
 embater 74
 embebedar-se 45
 embirrar 62
 embora 52, 223
 embrenhar-se 74
 emergir 153
 eminente 48
 empanturrado 212
 empatar 62
 empazinado 212
 empoleirar-se 74
 empregar 44
 emprego 241
 empurrar 45
 ena pá 52
 encantar-se 62
 encarar 209
 encarregar-se 68
 enclausurar 200
 encolerizar-se 188
 encontrar 44, 210
 encontrar-se 62
 encontro 44
 encosta 218
 encostar 227
 endinheirado 228

- enérgico 236
 enervar-se 62
 enfadar 188
 enfadar-se 187
 enfrentar 44, 209
 enfrente 209
 engalfinhar-se 74
 enganar 44, 202
 engano 239
 engarrafamento 193
 engenheiro 83
 engenhoso 45
 engraçado 212
 engrandecer 215
 engravidar 44
 enraivecido 188
 ensaiar 240
 entabular 192
 então 53
 entediar 188
 entender 68
 entender-se 62
 entrar 74, 188
 entre 75
 entregar 153, 213
 entreter-se 62, 208
 entusiasmar-se 62
 enumeração 200
 enumerar 200
 envaidecer-se 62
 envergonhar-se 68
 enviar 231
 enxuto 237
 equipa 215
 equipe 215
 equivalente 58
 era 48
 erguer 227
 esbelto 237
 esboço 207
 esbofetear 218
 escalada 196
 escapar-se 68
 escarnecer 68
 escopeta 216
 escrever 58, 153
 escritor 83
 escrivão 131
 escroque 201
 escultor 83
 escusar-se 58
 esfera 191
 esforçar-se 78, 239
 esmagar 205
 esmerar-se 240
- espaço 229
 espadas 132
 espalhar-se 74
 espanhol 130
 espantoso 237
 espantar-se 62
 espe(c)tador 83
 esperar 78
 esperto 220
 espesso 196
 espingarda 216
 espirituoso 212
 esponsais 132
 esquadrinhar 208
 esquecer-se 68
 esquelético 237
 esquema 207
 esquina 199
 esquisito 44, 212
 esse 175
 esses 175
 esta 47
 estar 47, 138, 149,
 156–159
 este 48, 175
 estes 175
 estilhaar 195
 estivador 83
 estragar 202
 estranho 212
 estratégia 43, 127,
 239
 estrear 240
 estudante 128
 estupendo 189
 estúpido 236
 esvair-se 74
 eu 169
 eventualmente 44
 evidência 233
 evitar 43, 45
 evolução 197
 examinar 208, 231
 exasperar 188
 exceder-se 74
 excelente 189
 excursão 221
 exemplo 225
 exéquias 132
 exigir 190
 êxito 45
 expedir 231
 experimentar 118, 240
 expressar 153
 expressar-se 230
- extender 215
 extinguir 153
- fábrica 45
 fabuloso 189
 fa(c)ção 215
 face 209
 facilitar 213, 217
 fado 211
 faiscar 232
 fala 222
 falar 58, 68, 74, 78, 230
 faltar 58
 famélico 237
 fanar 234
 fanqueiro 83
 fantástico 189
 fartar-se 68
 farto 211
 fascinar-se 62
 fato 50
 fazer 43, 62, 68, 78, 138,
 141, 153, 154
 fazer-se 192
 feira 233
 feliz 217
 fenda 219
 feriado 219
 férias 132, 219
 ferir 45, 232
 ferreiro 83
 festa 219
 festividade 219
 festivo 219
 fezes 132
 ficar 58, 156–157, 192
 ficar-se 78
 filamento 235
 filo 235
 final 46
 fingir 45
 fio 207
 fitar 231
 flanco 233
 fofinho 191
 fofa 191, 210
 fofocar 230
 fofura 191
 fogo 210
 fogueira 210
 folga 219
 fonema 127
 forma 225
 formar 45
 formar-se 45, 74

- forte 235
 fortuna 223
 fóssil 130
 fra(c)turar 195
 frade 129
 frasco 193
 frear 194
 freio 194
 freira 129
 fronteira 43
 fulgurar 232
 fundir-se 62
 fundos 190
 furacão 241
 furibundo 188
 furioso 188
 furo 219
 furtar 234
 fuzil 130, 216

 gabar-se 68
 galhos 234
 gandulo 222
 ganhar 153, 203
 garimpeiro 83
 garrafa 193
 garrafão 193
 gastar 153, 240
 gasto 224
 geladaria 84
 geladeira 50
 gelado 84
 gelar 50
 gênese 46
 genial 220
 gerente 128, 222
 ginásio 50
 gira 191
 giro 191
 golpear 218
 gordalhufo 210
 gordinho 210
 gordito 210
 gordo 209
 gostar 68
 gozar 50, 51, 62, 68, 208
 graça 49
 grama 127
 grande 45, 118, 135
 granizo 235
 grassa 49
 gritar 62
 grosseiro 196
 grosso 51
 grupo 215
 guarda 46

 guardião 131
 guia 46
 guiar 236, 237
 guichê 241
 guita 235

 há 48
 há cerca 49
 há que 160
 hábil 45
 habitar 47
 hábito 47
 harmonizar-se 62
 haver-se 62
 hera 48
 herege 128
 herói 129
 heroína 129
 hesitar 74
 hipermercado 233
 historiador 83
 homem 130
 homicida 128
 honorário 225
 horrorizar-se 62
 hóspede 128
 hotel 130

 idade 126
 idioma 221
 idiota 236
 ignorar 45
 ilegível 48
 ilibar 68
 imaginar 238
 imbecil 236
 imensos 119
 imigrante 128
 iminente 48
 imoral 206
 impacientar-se 62
 impedir 43, 68
 impermeabilizar 199
 impermeável 194
 implicar 62
 importar-se 62, 68
 importunar-se 63
 imprimir 153
 impuro 206
 imundice 205
 imundo 205
 incandecer 232
 incêndio 210
 incentivar 58
 inchado 212
 incisivos 238

 incivilizado 196
 incomodar-se 188
 incorrer 74
 incrementar 215
 incrível 189
 inculto 196
 incutir 74
 indagar 209
 indicar 220, 233
 indígena 128, 224
 indigente 226
 indignar-se 63
 indisciplinado 227
 indolente 222
 induzir 74
 infanta 129–130
 infante 129
 infanticida 128
 infeliz 230
 infestar 68
 influir 74
 informar 220
 infra(c)ção 200
 infringir 195, 201
 ingénuo 45
 ingressar 74
 ingresso 51
 inibir 68
 iniciar 192
 início 192
 injuriar 45
 inquietar-se 63
 insalubre 205
 inserir 153
 insistir 74
 inspe(c)cionar 208
 inspirar-se 74
 instruído 44
 insurgir-se 227
 insurreccionar-se 227
 inteirar-se 68
 inteligente 220
 intenção 43
 interessar-se 78
 interferir 74
 intérprete 128
 intoxicar 45
 intrépido 194
 introduzir 45, 227
 inutilizar 204
 invenção 131
 inventar 238
 investigar 209
 investir 74
 invocar 197
 ir 43, 58, 138, 149

- irar 188
 irritar-se 188
 ir-se 223
 isso 175
 isto 175
 isto é 54

 já 178
 já que 53
 janela 241
 jantar 229
 jargão 222
 jarro 193
 jeitoso 191
 jesuíta 127
 jogado 126
 jogador 83, 129–130
 jogadora 126
 jogral 129
 jograles 129
 jorna 225
 jornada 221
 jornalista 128
 jovem 128
 jovial 217
 juba 216
 judiar com 63
 jurisdição 127
 justiça 126

 kispo 198

 lá 178
 labor 241
 ladeira 233
 ladera 218
 lado 233
 ladrão 201
 lago 225
 lamacento 205
 lambe-botas 45
 lamentável 230
 lançar 232
 lançar-se 207
 lancha 193
 lápis 130
 largo 45, 118
 lavar-se 173
 leitaria 84
 leite 84
 leitura 45
 lembrar-se 68
 lençol 130
 letreiro 226
 levantar 227
 levantar-se 173

 levar 236, 240
 libertar 68
 licenciar-se 74
 ligada 197
 ligar 58, 63
 limão 131
 limitação 131
 limitar-se 58
 limite 207
 lindinho 191
 lindíssimo 191
 lindo 191
 língua 221
 linguagem 221
 linha 235
 livraria 45, 84
 livreiro 83
 livro 84, 126
 logo 178
 loja 232
 lombada 190
 longe 45
 longo 45
 loucura 126
 louvar 213
 lúcido 220
 lugar 217
 lume 210
 lupa 214
 luta 206
 lutar 79
 luzir 231

 maçã 223
 macadame 229
 machucar 45
 machucar-se 173
 magnífico 191
 magoar-se 173
 magro 237
 maior 182
 mais 179
 mal 178
 maldição 127
 malfeitor 208
 malhar 51
 maltratar 202
 malvado 208
 manchado 205
 mandar 44, 197, 231
 mandato 45
 mão 217
 maquinista 44
 margem 207, 234
 marquês 129
 marquesa 129

 mártir 128
 mas 53
 mascarar-se 68
 matar 232
 matéria 44
 materno 224
 matinas 132
 matricular-se 74
 mau 226
 meditar 74, 238
 medito 227
 melancólico 230
 melhor 182
 melhora 220
 melhoramento 220
 melhoria 220
 melindrar-se 63
 menina 194
 menino 194
 menor 182
 menos 179, 181–182
 mensagem 127
 mensalidade 225
 mercado 233
 merdento 206
 mergulhar 207
 mergulho 207
 mesa 46, 126
 mestra 129–130
 mestre 129, 237
 meter 227
 meter-se 63
 meu 136
 mexer 74
 mexericar 230
 minha 136
 minimercado 233
 miséria 45
 moça 51
 mocidade 126
 modelo 225
 moeda 223
 molar 238
 moleque 194
 molestar 45, 188
 molho 48
 monge 129
 monja 129–130
 monóculo 214
 monte 218
 montículo 218
 moral 46
 morder 74
 morrer 68, 153
 morro 218
 mostra 225

- mostrar 188, 233
 mostrar-se 188
 motor 193
 mudança 197
 mudar 68, 198
 muito 119, 175, 179
 multiplicar 79
 munir-se 68
 muralha 240
 muro 240
 murro 218
 musculoso 235
- na realidade 53
 na verdade 53
 nada 176
 nádegas 195
 namoriscar 63
 narmorar 63
 natal 224
 nativo 224
 natural 224
 navio 193
 necessitado 226
 necessitar 68
 negar-se 58
 negociar 74
 negócio 233
 nenhum 175
 nevão 235
 ninguém 176
 noivado 228
 nome 223
 nos 47
 nós 47, 49, 169
 nosso 136
 notar 210, 231
 notificar 220
 novela 45
 novelo 191
 novo 135
 noz 49
 numeração 200
 número 118, 200
 nunca 178
 núpcias 132
- o qual 174
 o que 186
 obedecer 58
 obeso 210
 obra 241
 obrigado 124
 obrigar 58
 obsceno 206
 obsequioso 45
- observar 231
 obstinado 236
 ocioso 222
 óculos 132, 214
 ocupação 241
 ocupar 226
 ocupar-se 68
 ocorrer 216
 oferenda 213
 oferta 212
 olhada 231
 olhar 79, 196, 209, 231
 olhar-se 173
 olheiras 132
 omitir 153
 onde 174, 186
 ônibus 51, 130
 ontem 178
 ópera 47
 operar 47
 opinar 238
 opinião 238
 optar 79
 ó(p)timo 189
 orar 58
 ordem 44
 ordem governamental 45
 ordinário 45
 órfão 131
 órgão 131
 orgulhar-se 68
 orgulhoso 226
 orifício 219
 oriundo 224
 orla 207, 234
 ossudo 237
 ou 179
 ou seja 53
 ouros 132
 outorgar 213
 outrem 176
 outro 175
 ouvir 138
- pá 53
 paço 49
 padaria 84
 padecer 68
 pagamento 225
 pagão 131
 pagar 153
 país 45
 paisagem 127
 palestra 45
 paleta 198
 panzudo 210
- pão 84, 131, 191
 papa 127
 papá 127
 papel 45, 131
 para 47, 75–76
 para onde 186
 parar 68
 parecer 188
 parecer-se 63
 parede 240
 parentes 45
 parte 239
 partida 239
 partido 215
 partir 68, 201, 222
 parvo 236
 passagem 127
 passar 68, 79–80, 189
 passar a ferro 57
 passar a limpo 57
 passar-se 216
 passear 47
 passo 49
 passo a passo 56
 pastel 84
 pastelaria 84
 patrão 222
 patriarca 127
 patriota 128
 pau 234
 paus 132
 peão 49
 pecado 200
 pecar 201
 pedir 138, 190
 pedra 229
 pedreiro 83
 pedrinha 229
 pegar 214
 pegar-se 63, 218
 pele 216
 pejeja 206
 pelo 47, 216
 pêlo 47
 pelo contrário 53
 peluche 216
 pendurar 74
 pendurar-se 74
 penetrante 220
 penha 218, 229
 penhasco 218
 pensar 68, 237
 pensar de 238
 pensar em 238
 pensar que 237
 pentear-se 173

- pequeno 118
 pera 216
 perceber 68, 231
 percurso 221
 perdão 123
 perder 138, 240
 perder-se 68
 perdição 127
 perfil 233
 pergunta 190
 perguntar 79, 190
 periferia 224
 périplo 221
 perscrutar 208
 persistente 236
 pertencer 58
 pertinaz 236
 pesado 228
 pêsames 132
 pesquisar 209
 pessimista 230
 piada 212
 pianista 128
 pião 49
 pico 239
 pintor 83
 pior 182
 pirata 127
 piscina 225
 pistar 232
 pistola 216
 pleno 212
 pobre 135, 226
 poça 225
 pocilga 205
 poço 219
 podar 201
 poder 47, 138, 141, 161
 poder ser 161
 poderoso 236
 poder-se dizer 54
 por exemplo 54
 poeta 129
 poetisa 129
 pois 53
 pois é 54
 polaca 51
 polêmica/polémica 206
 polícia 46
 pomba 51
 ponderar 238
 ponta 207
 pontapé 232
 ponto 44
 pôr 47, 76–79, 140, 153,
 227, 231
 por 167
 por conseguinte 54
 por favor 124
 por isso 54
 por que 49, 186
 por último 54
 por um lado 54
 porcaria 205
 porco 45, 205
 porfiado 236
 porquê 186
 porque 49
 porrada 218
 pôr-se 192
 porventura 211
 posicionar 227
 postar 227
 pôster 226
 posto 241
 posuar 227
 pouco 175, 179
 pouco a pouco 56
 praticar 207
 precipitar-se 207
 precisar 68
 pregar 239
 preguiçoso 222
 preocupar-se 43
 prescindir 68
 presdigitador 83
 presenciar 231
 preservativo 45
 presidente 128
 presidir 58
 pressa 219
 prestar atenção 45
 presumido 227
 presunçoso 227
 pretender 45
 prevenir 45
 primar 79
 primeiro 224
 primícias 132
 princesa 129
 príncipe 129
 principiante 193
 principiar 192
 princípio 192
 prisão de ventre 44
 processar 45
 procurar 239
 professor 237
 profeta 129
 profetisa 129
 progressão 197
 progresso 220
 prolongar 215
 pronunciar 230
 propina 51
 proporcionar 213
 proteger-se 68
 provar 240
 puto 51
 putrefa(c)ção 127
 puxa 51
 puxar 45
 quadra 51
 qual 186
 quando 186
 quanto 186
 quantos 186
 quarteirão 119
 quartel 43
 quarto 229
 quase 179
 que 174
 quebrar 195
 queixar-se 68, 173
 quem 174, 186
 quer dizer 54
 quer . . . quer 53–54
 querrela 206
 querer 140, 149
 questionar 228
 rabo 195, 196
 rabujar 63
 radicar-se 74
 rádio 47
 rainha 129
 raiz 130
 rajada 241
 ralar-se 63
 ramo 119
 rapariga 51, 129, 194
 rapaz 129, 130, 194
 raro 212
 ratificação 189
 ratificar 189
 ré 129
 reagir 58
 realidade 126
 realizar 43, 46
 realizar-se 217
 realmente 179
 reatar 63
 recair 74
 recanto 199
 recear 79
 recheio 211
 rechonchudo 210

- reclamação 118
 reclamar 118
 recolher 197, 214
 recompor-se 68
 reconhecer 210
 recordar-se 68
 recorrer 58
 recruta 47
 redondinha 191
 reduzir 58, 201
 referir-se 58
 refilar 63
 refinado 44
 refletir 74
 refletir-se 74
 reflexionar 238
 refulgir 232
 regalar-se 63
 reger-se 79
 regozijar-se 79
 regressar 58, 190
 rei 129
 relógio 126
 reluzir 231
 remediado 226
 remeter 58, 231
 remoíno 241
 remos 193
 render-se 58, 213
 renhido 199
 renunciar 58
 reparar 74
 repartir 213
 repercutir-se 74
 repleto 211
 reprovar 74
 reputar 68
 requerer 190
 resignar-se 63
 resistir 58
 resplandecer 231
 responder 58
 responsável 222
 ressentir-se 68
 restituir 58
 réu 129
 reunião 215
 reunir-se 173
 revelar 210, 233
 revoltar-se 227
 revólver 216
 ribanceiro 218
 ricaço 228
 rico 228
 rir-se 69
 rivalizar 63, 74
 robusto 209, 235
 roca 229
 rochedo 229
 rogar 190
 roído 49
 romance 45, 46
 romancista 84
 romper 153, 195
 roubar 201, 234
 rude 196
 ruído 49
 ruim 226
 ruína 204
 rutilar 232
 saber 58, 69, 141, 149, 159, 221
 sacerdote 129
 sacerdotisa 129
 sacristão 131
 saída 45
 sair 58, 69, 222
 sala 229
 salão 229
 salário 225
 salientar 233
 salpicar 69
 salto 217
 salvação 127
 salvar 153
 sapataria 84
 sapateiro 83
 sapato 84, 126
 satisfeito 217
 se (passive voice) 161–162
 se não 49
 se(c)cionar 201
 secretaria 47
 secretária 47
 seduzir
 seguir 138, 231
 seguir-se 58
 seio 48
 selo 228
 sem 49, 79
 semblante 188, 209
 sempre 178
 senão 49
 senhor 222
 sensato 46
 sensível 46
 senso 49
 sentar-se 173
 sentir 138
 sentir-se 173
 separar 69
 ser 79, 138, 140, 149, 154, 156–158
 servente 128
 servir 69
 servir-se 69
 setor 237
 seu 136
 silhueta 207
 silvicultor 83
 sim 179
 simpático 46
 simpatizar 63
 simples 135
 sina 211
 sinto 49
 sírio 48
 siso, dente do 238
 sítio 229
 sito 51
 situar 227
 só 178
 sob 79–80
 soberbo 227
 sobre 80
 sobrenome 223
 sobressair 232
 sobretudo 198
 sobrevir 217
 sobreviver 58
 socorrer 217
 sofrer 69
 solicitar 190
 solidarizar-se 63
 solido 235
 sondar 231
 sonhar 63
 sórdido 206
 sorte 211
 sotão 131
 sua 136
 subir 196, 227
 subjugar 203
 submergir-se 207
 subsídio 225
 subsistir 69
 subtrair 234
 subúrbios 225
 suceder 216
 suicida 128
 suicidar-se 173
 sujo 205
 superfície 209, 239
 supermercado 233
 suplicar 190
 suprimir 201
 surgir 69

- surpreendente 212
 suspeitar 69
 suspirar 79

 tabelião 131
 tábua 46
 taça 214
 tação 217
 tacho 241
 taipa 240
 talcanhar 217
 talhar 202
 também 179
 tambor 218
 tanto 175
 tão/tanto (with
 comparisons of
 equality) 182–183
 tardar 58, 74
 tarde 178
 tarefa 241
 tecido 45
 teimar 74
 teimoso 236
 telefonar 191
 telegrama 127
 temer a Deus 58
 tempestade 234
 temporal 234
 tenaz 236
 tenção 49
 tender 58
 tensão 49
 tentação 127
 tentar 239, 240
 ter 138, 140, 141
 ter que 160
 termos 193
 testemunhar 231
 teto 239
 teu 136
 time 215
 tingir 69
 tirar 237, 240
 tiro 232
 tiznado 205
 toca 219
 tomar 214, 236
 tonto 236
 topar 210
 topo 239
 tormenta 234
 tornar 58
 tornar-se 192

 torvelinho 241
 tosco 196
 toureiro 83
 trabalho 45, 241
 traçado 207
 trajeto 221
 tramóia 239
 transatlântico 193
 transbordante 211
 transformação 197
 transformar 74, 198
 transformar-se 192
 transgredir 201
 transgressão 200
 transigir 63, 74
 transpirar 46
 transportar 237
 trás 49
 traseiro 195
 travão 194
 travar 192, 194
 travessura 239
 traz 49
 trazer 138, 141, 240
 trem 51
 tremeluzir 232
 tremendo 189
 trepadeira 196
 trepar 196
 treta 239
 triste 44, 230
 tristeza 45
 tristonho 230
 triturar 205
 triunfar 203
 troca 198
 trocar 44, 198
 troco 198, 223
 tropeçar 210
 trovoada 234
 truncar 202
 truque 239
 tu 84–85, 169
 tua 136
 tudo 176
 turma 51

 universidade 44
 untuoso 45
 usar 240
 usurpar 226

 vagem 130
 vaidade 126

 vaidoso 227
 valente 194, 236
 valer-se 69
 vamos lá ver 55
 vara 234
 varinha 234
 vário 175
 vários 119
 vela 193
 velhaco 208
 velho 135, 224
 velocidade 126
 vencer 203
 vendaval 241
 vendedor 83
 vento 241
 ventura 211
 ver 138, 153, 231
 verdade 43, 126
 vertente 233
 vestir 240
 vestir-se 173
 vetusto 224
 viagem 49, 127, 221
 viajar 228
 viagem 49
 vidro 214, 241
 vigoroso 236
 vingar-se 69
 violinista 128
 vir 58, 138, 140, 153
 vitória 202
 vitral 241
 viver 69
 víveres 132
 vivo 220
 você 84–85, 169
 vocês 169
 vogal 47
 volta 221
 voltar 190, 191, 209
 vos 47
 vós 47, 49
 vosso 136
 votar 74
 voz 49
 vulgar 45

 xícara 214
 xutar 232

 zangado 188
 zangar-se 63, 188
 zarpar 223